Copyright is owned by the Author of the thesis. Permission is given for a copy to be downloaded by an individual for the purpose of research and private study only. The thesis may not be reproduced elsewhere without the permission of the Author.
Characterization of ACC Oxidase
from the Leaves of
*Malus domestica* Borkh. (Apple)

A thesis presented in partial fulfilment of the requirements
for the degree of

Doctor of Philosophy
in
Plant Biochemistry and Molecular Biology

Institute of Molecular BioSciences
Massey University,
Palmerston North
New Zealand

Jan E. Binnie

2007
ABSTRACT

The expression, accumulation and kinetic properties of l-aminocyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid (ACC) oxidase (ACO), the enzyme which catalyses the final step in the ACC-dependent pathway of ethylene biosynthesis in plants, is examined.

The investigation is divided into three sections: (i) identification of two ACO genes in apple leaf tissue, designated MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3, (ii) kinetic analyses of each of the three isoforms of ACO in apple (MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3) expressed in E. coli, and (iii) temporal and developmental expression in vivo of each of the ACO genes and accumulation of the corresponding gene products in leaf and fruit tissue.

The coding regions of putative ACO gene transcripts were generated from leaf tissue using RT-PCR. Sequence alignments and interrogation of the expressed sequence tags (ESTs) database indicated that the entire open reading frame (ORF) sequences were encoded by two distinct genes, and these are designated MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3. A third ACO gene had been identified in apple by other research workers previously, and designated MD-ACO1. Differences are obvious in the number of base-pairs (bp) constituting the entire ORF of MD-ACO1 (942 bp), MD-ACO2 (990 bp) and MD-ACO3 (966 bp). MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 share a close nucleotide sequence identity of 93.9 % in the ORF but diverge in the 3’ untranslated regions (3’-UTR) (69.5 %). In contrast, MD-ACO3 shares a lower sequence identity with both MD-ACO1 (78.5 %) and MD-ACO2 (77.8 %) in the ORF, and in the 3’-UTR (MD-ACO1, 68.4 %; MD-ACO2, 71 %). A comparison of the gene structures show that the endonuclease restriction sites are unique to each individual MD-ACO sequence. Genomic Southern analysis, using probes spanning the 3’-UTR and the 3’-end of the coding region confirmed that MD-ACO3 is encoded by a distinct gene. However, while the distinction between MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 is not as definitive, different gene expression patterns adds credence to their distinctiveness. Each of the three deduced amino acid sequences contain all of the residues hitherto reported to be necessary for maximal ACO activity.

Expression of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 as fusion proteins in E. coli was induced using isopropyl-β-D-thiogalactopyranoside (IPTG), the recombinant proteins purified by nickel-nitrilotriacetic acid (NiNTA) affinity chromatography and the products had predicted masses determined from the nucleotide sequences, including the His-tag of 38.53 kDa (MD-ACO1), 40.39 kDa (MD-ACO2) and 39.3 kDa (MD-ACO3). Polyclonal antibodies were raised against the MD-ACO3 fusion in rabbit for western blot analysis. Antibodies had been raised previously
against recombinant MD-ACO1, and while it was considered likely the MD-ACO2 would be recognized by the MD-ACO1 antibodies, MD-ACO2 does not appear to be recognized \textit{in vivo} by the antibody.

Analyses of the kinetic properties of the three apple ACOs was undertaken. Apparent Michaelis constants (K\textsubscript{m}) of 89.39 \mu M (MD-ACO1), 401.03 \mu M (MD-ACO2) and 244.5 \mu M (MD-ACO3) have been determined which suggests differences in the affinity of each enzyme for the substrate ACC. Maximum velocity (V\textsubscript{max}) was determined for MD-ACO1 (15.15 nmol), MD-ACO2 (12.94 nmol) and MD-ACO3 (18.94 nmol). The catalytic constant (K\textsubscript{cat}) was determined for MD-ACO1 (6.6 x 10\textsuperscript{-2}), MD-ACO2 (3.44 x 10\textsuperscript{-2}) and for MD-ACO3 (9.14 x 10\textsuperscript{-2}), with K\textsubscript{cat}/K\textsubscript{m} (\mu M s\textsuperscript{-1}) values of 7.38 x 10\textsuperscript{4} \mu M s\textsuperscript{-1} (MD-ACO1), 0.86 x 10\textsuperscript{4} M s\textsuperscript{-1} (MD-ACO2) and 3.8 x 10\textsuperscript{4} \mu M s\textsuperscript{-1} (MD-ACO3). The optimal pH for MD-ACO1 was 7.0 - 7.5, MD-ACO2 7.5 - 8.0 and MD-ACO3 7.0 - 8.0. All three isoforms exhibited absolute requirements for the co-substrate ascorbate \textit{in vitro} with optimal activity at 30 mM. Similarly, ferrous iron (FeSO\textsubscript{4}.7H\textsubscript{2}O; of 15 – 25 \mu M) and sodium bicarbonate (NaHCO\textsubscript{3}; of 30 mM) were required for optimal activity, and were the same for all isoforms. No significant difference in thermostability was found in this study between the MD-ACO isoforms at the P = 0.05 level. However, the activities of the enzyme differed significantly between temperatures over time.

\textit{In vivo} expression of each of the ACO genes in leaf tissue determined using RT-PCR and cDNA Southern analysis reveal that both \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3} are expressed in young leaf tissue and in mature leaf tissue. While \textit{MD-ACO3} is expressed predominantly in young leaf tissue, \textit{MD-ACO2} (in common with \textit{MD-ACO1}) is expressed predominantly in mature fruit tissue. None of the \textit{MD-ACOs} were observed to be senescence associated genes (SAG). MD-ACO3 protein accumulated predominantly in young leaf tissue and less intensely in both mature leaf tissue and young fruit tissue, while MD-ACO1 accumulated only in mature fruit tissue. For the developmental studies, samples were collected at approximately 11 am in this study. \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3} were also expressed in leaf tissue collected over a 24 h period in the spring and also in the autumn. For both genes transcripts accumulated in the presence of fruit but tended to disappear in the absence of fruit.

These results show that \textit{MD-ACO1}, \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3} are differentially expressed, and that MD-ACO3 is encoded by a gene distinct from MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2. MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are either allelic forms of the same gene or closely clustered. Although there is some variation in kinetic properties which may reflect different physiological environments, they do not vary greatly.
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I would like to express my sincere gratitude to my supervisor Professor Michael T. McManus for guiding me through this work with enthusiasm, humour, encouragement and patience. Such an experienced and trusted advisor is a privilege to interact with; thank you for your time Michael, and consideration, I feel I cannot say enough.

I wish to acknowledge my three consecutive second supervisors at HortResearch, Dr Dennis Greer, Dr Dr Jens Wünsche and Dr Stuart Tustin. I am particularly grateful to Dennis Greer, now at the Charles Sturt University in Australia, for securing funding from HortResearch for an Enterprise Scholarship with the New Zealand Foundation for Research Science and Technology. To Jens Wünsche, now back in Germany, at Stuttgart University, thank you for your expertise and advice in the orchard at Crosses Road, Havelock North Research Centre, particularly for your assistance with the portable photosynthetic system. Thanks also to my final supervisor Stuart Tustin.

This is also a good opportunity to thank the great team at HortResearch in the Hawkes Bay, including Jens, Stuart, Dr Steven McArtney, and many others for answering the numerous questions I threw at them, Paul Brookfield for help with the GC, the orchard harvesting manager (Armann) for organizing the fruit to be picked when I wanted the trees to be stripped of fruit, to the security guards who held back the dogs as I collected samples in the middle of the night, and to the many others who I asked for assistance during my research. I would also like to thank HortResearch for providing the gala apple trees specifically for my use during this project. Dr Robert Simpson at HortResearch in Palmerston North for assistance with the EST database searches and Dr Andy Allen at HortResearch in Auckland for providing the virtual northern data.

I gratefully acknowledge the assistance of Michael’s post-doc Richard Scott, research assistances Anya Lambert and Susanna Leung for assistance with the cloning, as well as technicians Cait Inglis (especially when shifting labs) and Lena Ling. Also the other members of Michael’s crew who were in the lab when I arrived, Simone, Vikki, the mad Greg, Trish, Ning and Balance. To the masters students for their breath of fresh air, Fiona, tall Mathew and the taller Mathew. Elizabeth, I’ve really enjoyed your friendship and fun, as well as the discussions about our respective research. To the newer ones Marissa, Jolla, Ludivine and Aluh, I wish you all the best with your studies, and to Michael’s new post-doc Sarah-Jane Dorling for being enthusiastic about everything.
My appreciation also goes to many members of the Institute of Molecular Biosciences; in the Allan Wilson Centre, Trish McLenachen for her help with the bioinformatics, Associate Professor Peter Lockhart, Dr Lesley Collins and Richard Carter for assistance with the construction of the phylogenetic tree, Lorraine Berry for sequencing, and many others; Gill Norris’s lab, particularly the legendary Trevor Loo; to the IMBS post-docs generally for their suggestions and encouragement, and importantly to the technical support particularly Chris Burrows and Carol Flyger, and also Paul Hocquard; and to the many others who for one reason or another have been asked for assistance, thank you all. Also thanks to the Institute of Fundamental Science people, particularly Peter Lewis and the workshop guys.

I would like to thank the New Zealand Foundation for Research, Science and Technology (FRST) together with the Horticulture and Food Research Institute of New Zealand Ltd (HortResearch) for a Bright Future Enterprise Scholarship.

I am also grateful to the New Zealand Society of Biochemistry and Molecular Biology, the New Zealand Society of Plant Physiologists (now Biologists) and the Institute of Molecular Biosciences for providing generous travel assistance grants for me to attend conferences including the 7th International Symposium on the Plant Hormone Ethylene, in Pisa, Italy.

My final and very special thanks must go to my partner John for the support and encouragement he has given me throughout the project, and for making life fun despite the PhD.
# TABLE OF CONTENTS

ABSTRACT ........................................................................................................... ii
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS ....................................................................................... iv
TABLE OF CONTENTS ......................................................................................... vi
LIST OF FIGURES ................................................................................................. xii
LIST OF TABLES .................................................................................................... xv
LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS ................................................................................... xvii
ABBREVIATIONS FOR AMINO ACIDS ................................................................. xxi

Chapter One: INTRODUCTION ........................................................................... 1

1.1 ETHYLENE IN PLANT DEVELOPMENT ....................................................... 1

1.2 ETHYLENE PERCEPTION AND SIGNAL TRANSDUCTION ................. 2

1.2.1 Ethylene Perception ............................................................................... 2

1.2.2 Ethylene Signal Transduction ............................................................... 4

1.3 ETHYLENE BIOSYNTHESES IN HIGHER PLANTS .................................. 6

1.3.1 SAM Synthetase .................................................................................... 8

1.3.2 ACC Synthase (ACS) ............................................................................ 10

1.3.3 Conjugation of ACC ............................................................................. 14

1.4 ACC OXIDASE (ACO) .............................................................................. 15

1.4.1 The Ethylene-Forming Enzyme (EFE) .................................................. 15

1.4.2 Catalytic Mechanism of ACC Oxidase ................................................... 17

1.4.3 ACC Oxidase Gene Expression in Higher Plants ................................... 22

1.5 CIRCADIAN REGULATON AND BIOLOGICAL CLOCKS ................. 26

1.6 MALUS DOMESTICA L. BORKH. (APPLE) ........................................... 28

1.6.1 ACC Oxidase in Malus domestica ......................................................... 29

1.6.1.1 Expression of ACC Oxidase in Apple .............................................. 29

1.6.1.2 Purification, Characterization and Kinetic Properties of ACC Oxidase in apple ................................................................. 30

1.6.1.3 Requirement of Apple ACC Oxidase for Co-substrate and Co-factors .... 32

1.6.1.4 Localization of ACC Oxidase in Apple .............................................. 36

1.6.1.5 The Focus of Apple Studies .............................................................. 37

1.7 OBJECTIVE AND AIMS OF THE THESIS ........................................... 39
Chapter Two: MATERIALS AND METHODS ........................................ 40

2.1 PLANT MATERIAL ............................................................................... 40

2.1.1 Harvesting of Plant Material ................................................................. 40

2.1.2 Chlorophyll Quantification ................................................................. 43

2.1.2.1 Statistical Analysis ................................................................. 43

2.1.3 Leaf Carbon Assimilation Measurements ............................................. 44

2.1.4 Protein Extraction from Apple Tissue .................................................. 44

2.2 MOLECULAR METHODS ................................................................. 44

2.2.1 Growth and Storage of E. coli ............................................................... 44

2.2.1.1 Luria-Bertani (LB) Media and LB Ampicillin\textsuperscript{100} Plates ........ 44

2.2.1.2 Preparation of Competent Cells ...................................................... 45

2.2.2 Isolation of Ribonucleic Acid (RNA) ................................................. 46

2.2.2.1 Extraction of Total RNA ............................................................... 46

2.2.2.2 Quantification of RNA in Solution ................................................ 49

2.2.3 Reverse Transcriptase Polymerase Chain Reaction (RT-PCR) ............ 49

2.2.3.1 Generation of cDNA using Reverse Transcriptase ......................... 50

2.2.3.2 Amplification of cDNA by Polymerase Chain Reaction ................ 50

2.2.3.3 Primers Used for In-Frame Cloning ................................................ 54

2.2.3.4 Relative Quantitative RT-PCR using Quantum RNA\textsuperscript{TM} 18S Internal Standards .................................................. 57

2.2.4 Cloning of PCR Products into Plasmid Vectors .................................. 58

2.2.4.1 Ethanol Precipitation of DNA or RNA ............................................. 58

2.2.4.2 Quantification of DNA ............................................................... 59

2.2.4.3 Agarose Gel Electrophoresis of DNA ............................................. 59

2.2.4.4 DNA Recovery from Agarose Gels ............................................... 60

2.2.4.5 DNA Ligation ........................................................................ 61

2.2.4.6 Transformation of E. coli using the Heat Shock Method .................. 63

2.2.5 Characterization and Sequencing of Cloned DNA in E. coli .................. 64

2.2.5.1 Isolation of Plasmids from E. coli by the Alkaline Lysis Method ........ 64

2.2.5.2 Plasmid Isolation from E. coli by the Rapid Boiling Method .......... 65

2.2.5.3 Digestion of DNA with Endonuclease Restriction Enzymes .......... 65

2.2.5.4 Purification of Plasmid DNA for Sequencing ................................... 66

2.2.5.5 Purification of PCR Products ....................................................... 67
2.2.5.6 Preparation for Automated Sequencing of DNA ...........................................68
2.2.6 DNA Sequencing Analysis .................................................................69
  2.2.6.1 Sequence Alignment .................................................................69
  2.2.6.2 Sequence Phylogeny .................................................................69
2.2.7 Southern Analysis ...............................................................................70
  2.2.7.1 Isolation of Genomic DNA .............................................................70
  2.2.7.2 Digestion of Genomic DNA ............................................................71
  2.2.7.3 Southern Blotting of Genomic DNA ................................................72
  2.2.7.4 Southern Blotting of cDNA Fragments .............................................73
  2.2.7.5 Labelling DNA for Southern Analysis with [\(\alpha\)-\(^{32}\)P]-dATP ................74
  2.2.7.6 Hybridisation and Washing of DNA Blots .........................................74
  2.2.7.7 Stripping Southern Blots ...............................................................75
2.3 EXPRESSION, PURIFICATION, ANALYSIS OF ENZYME
ACTIVITY AND PROTEIN ACCUMULATION ..............................................75
  2.3.1 Preliminary Induction of Recombinant Proteins ....................................76
  2.3.2 Large Scale Induction of Recombinant Proteins ...................................76
  2.3.3 Isolation of Glutathione-S-Transferase (GST) Fusion Proteins ..............77
  2.3.4 Purification of His-Tagged Proteins by Metal Chelate Affinity
Chromatography ..................................................................................79
  2.3.4.1 Cleaning of Nickel Nitrilotriacetic Acid (Ni-NTA) Resin ....................79
  2.3.4.2 Cleavage of the Histidine Tag (His-Tag) from the Fusion Protein
Using Tobacco Etch Virus (TEV) Protease .............................................80
  2.3.4.3 Acetone Precipitation of Recombinant Proteins ...............................81
  2.3.5 Sephadex G-25 Gel Filtration Chromatography ...................................81
  2.3.6 Fast Protein Liquid Chromatography (FPLC) .......................................82
  2.3.6.1 Anion Exchange Chromatography ................................................83
  2.3.6.2 Column Cleaning ........................................................................83
  2.3.7 The Bradford Protein Assay ................................................................84
  2.3.8 ACC Oxidase Assay ...........................................................................84
  2.3.8.1 Determination of pH Optimum .......................................................85
  2.3.8.2 Optimal Requirements for Co-Substrate and Co-Factors ..................86
  2.3.8.3 Determination of \(K_m\), \(V_{max}\) and \(K_{cat}\) ........................................86
  2.3.8.4 Determination of Thermal Stability ................................................86
  2.3.9 Ethylene Analysis .............................................................................87
2.3.9.1 Measurement of Ethylene using Gas Chromatography ........................................ 87
2.3.9.2 Measurement of Ethylene Production in Plant Tissues ........................................ 87
2.3.9.3 Ethylene Calculations ......................................................................................... 87

2.3.10 Sodium Dodecyl Sulphate-Polyacrylamide Gel Electrophoresis (SDS-PAGE) ......................... 88
2.3.10.1 Preparing and Running Linear (12%) SDS-PAGE ........................................ 88
2.3.10.2 Preparing and Running Gradient (10% to 20%) SDS-PAGE ............................... 90
2.3.10.3 Coomassie Brilliant Blue (CBB) Staining .......................................................... 90

2.3.11 Western Analysis .................................................................................................. 91
2.3.11.1 Production of Primary Polyclonal Antibodies .................................................. 91
2.3.11.2 Electrophoretical Transfer of Proteins from Gel to PVDF Membrane ............... 91
2.3.11.3 Immunodetection of Proteins on PVDF Membrane ......................................... 93
2.3.11.4 Amino Acid Sequencing of N-Terminal Peptide Sequences ............................ 94

Chapter Three: RESULTS .......................................................................................... 95

3.1 ACC OXIDASE GENES IN MALUS DOMESTICA BORKH. (APPLE) ....................... 95
3.1.1 Molecular Cloning of Protein-Coding Regions of ACC Oxidase Genes in Malus domestica (cultivar: Gala) ......................................................................................... 95
3.1.2 Confirmation of Putative ACC Oxidase cDNAs .................................................. 97
3.1.3 Expressed Sequence Tag (EST) Searches at HortResearch .................................. 104
3.1.4 Summary of Gene Nomenclature ........................................................................ 107
3.1.5 Genomic Structure of the Malus domestica ACC Oxidase Genes ...................... 108
3.1.6 Sequence Analysis of ACC Oxidase from Malus domestica ............................... 111
3.1.6.1 Nucleotide Sequence Identities Amongst the ORF of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 ................................................................. 111
3.1.6.2 NCBI Nucleotide Database BLAST Analysis of the Entire ORF for Each of the ACC Oxidase Sequences .................................................. 111
3.1.6.3 Analysis of the Deduced Translational Sequences of Each of the ACC Oxidase Proteins ........................................................................ 115
3.1.7 Confirmation by Southern Analysis that MD-ACO3 is Encoded by a Gene Distinct from MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 ......................................................... 117
3.1.8 Evidence that Three Members of the MD-ACO Multi-gene Family are Differentially Expressed In Vivo ................................................................. 122
3.2 EXPRESSION AND CHARACTERIZATION OF MD-AC01, MD-AC02 AND MD-AC03 AS RECOMBINANT PROTEINS .......... 130

3.2.1 Protein Expression of MD-AC01, MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 .......... 130

3.2.1.1 Expression of Recombinant Protein in E. coli .......... 130

3.2.1.2 Purification of His-Tagged Fusion Proteins .......... 133

3.2.2 Characterization of Polyclonal Antibodies Raised Against MD-AC0 Fusion Proteins .......... 139

3.2.2.1 Protein Accumulation of MD-AC01/MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 in Apple Tissue .......... 143

3.2.2.2 Protein Analysis: Removal of the His-Tag .......... 143

3.2.3 Kinetic Properties of MD-AC01, MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 .......... 146

3.2.3.1 Optimal Substrate and Co-factor Requirements for MD-AC0 Activity .......... 146

3.2.3.2 The Michaelis-Constant (K_m) and Maximum Velocity (V_max) of the MD-AC0 Isoforms for ACC .......... 148

3.2.3.3 Assessment of some Kinetic Parameters using the Same ACC Oxidase Isoform Generated in Two Different Expression Vector Systems .......... 152

3.2.3.3 Thermostability of MD-AC01, MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 .......... 154

3.3 ACC OXIDASE GENE EXPRESSION IN THE BOURSE SHOOT LEAVES OF APPLE .......... 157

3.3.1 Physiological Measurements, MD-AC0 Protein Accumulation and Gene Expression During Leaf Development .......... 157

3.3.1.1 Change in Chlorophyll Concentration .......... 157

3.3.1.2 Photosynthesis Measurements .......... 159

3.3.1.3 Protein Accumulation and Gene Expression .......... 163

3.3.2 ACC Oxidase Gene Expression and Protein Accumulation in the Leaves of Apple Over a 24 h Period .......... 170

Chapter Four: DISCUSSION .......... 176

4.1 OVERVIEW .......... 176

4.2 ACC OXIDASE GENES IN MALUS DOMESTICA .......... 176

4.2.1 Evidence of a Multi-Gene Family in Apple by Genomic Southern Analysis .......... 176
4.2.2 Gene Structure of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3; Comparison of Exons and Introns.................................178
4.2.3 Translated Products of MD-ACO Genes.................................180
4.2.4 Confirmation of MD-ACO Differential Gene Expression In Vivo ........181
4.3 EXPRESSION AND CHARACTERIZATION OF MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 AND MD-ACO3 AS RECOMBINANT PROTEINS.............187
4.3.1 Kinetic Properties of the MD-ACO Isoforms.............................187
4.3.2 Thermostability of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3.................195
4.3.3 Physiological Significance of the Kinetic Properties of MD-ACOs ..........197
4.3.4 Some Possible Limitations of Expressing MD-ACOs in E. coli..........200
4.4 ACC OXIDASE ACCUMULATION AND GENE EXPRESSION IN THE BOURSE SHOOT LEAVES OF MALUS DOMESTICA ..........202
4.4.1 MD-ACO Accumulation and Gene Expression During Leaf Development.................................203
4.4.2 MD-ACO Accumulation and Gene Expression in Leaves Over a 24 h Period.................................................................206
4.5 Summary .................................................................210
4.6 Future Directions..........................................................211

APPENDIX 1A.................................................................212
APPENDIX 1B.................................................................213
BIBLIOGRAPHY..............................................................215
# LIST OF FIGURES

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Figure</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>Ethylene biosynthesis and the Yang (Methionine) Cycle</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>The stoichiometry of the reaction catalyzed by ACC oxidase</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>The bourse shoot leaves of Apple</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>Sequence of the primers used in RT-PCR to amplify putative ACC oxidase sequences</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>The map and schematic diagram of the pGEX-GP-3 Vector and the vector multiple cloning site</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>The map and schematic diagram of the pProEX-1 Vector and the vector multiple cloning site</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>pGEM®-T Easy Vector circle map and sequence reference points</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>Sequence of the promoter and multiple cloning site of the pGEM®-T Easy Vector</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>Arrangement of the apparatus used to transfer DNA samples to Hybond™-N⁺ Membranes</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.8</td>
<td>Western blotting apparatus: assembly of the electrophoretic transfer of proteins from an acrylamide gel to PVDF membrane</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.9</td>
<td>BioRad semi-dry trans-blot cell</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>PCR amplification of a putative ACC oxidase cDNA using RT-generated cDNA templates from total RNA isolated from newly initiated green leaves, mature green leaves and senescing leaves</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>Cloning of putative cDNAs encoding ACC oxidase in newly initiated green leaves, mature green leaves and senescing leaves of <em>Malus domestica</em> generated using RT-PCR</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>Comparison between the translated sequences of the partial cDNAs JEB:α and JEB:β with corresponding ACC oxidase sequences as indicated</td>
<td>104</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.4</td>
<td>Comparison of the deduced amino acid sequences of JEB:α (<em>MD-ACO2</em>) with Genbank accession number AF015787 and EST 120223 and EST 153710</td>
<td>106</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>Comparisons of the deduced amino acid sequences of JEB:β (<em>MD-ACO3</em>) with EST 179706 and EST 192136</td>
<td>108</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.6</td>
<td>Gene structure of <em>MD-ACO1</em> and <em>MD-ACO2</em> with a putative structure determined for <em>MD-ACO3</em></td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.7</td>
<td>Comparison of the deduced amino acid sequences of the open reading frames of <em>MD-ACO1</em>, <em>MD-ACO2</em> and <em>MD-ACO3</em></td>
<td>116</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Figure 3.8  Phylogenetic analysis of the three ACC oxidase amino acid sequences from *Malus domestica* with other ACC oxidase genes in the Genbank database .......................................................... 118

Figure 3.9  Specificity of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 as probes in blotting analysis .......................................................... 119

Figure 3.10  Southern analysis of *Malus domestica* genomic DNA .................. 121

Figure 3.11  Virtual northern .................................................................. 122

Figure 3.12  Evidence that MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 are expressed differentially *in vivo* ........................................ 124

Figure 3.13  The position of the forward intron spanning primers of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3, the forward position of the probe primers, and the reverse 3'-UTR primers used for both fragments and probes .................................................. 126

Figure 3.14  Relative quantitative RT-PCR analysis of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 expression *in vivo* .................. 127

Figure 3.15  Confirmation that MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 are differentially expressed *in vivo* using cDNA Southern analysis ............... 129

Figure 3.16  MD-ACO1, (putative) MD-ACO2 and (putative) MD-ACO3 expressed in *E. coli* (strain BL-21) using the pGEX expression vector ............... 131

Figure 3.17  Specific activities of recombinant MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 expressed in the pGEX Vector .................................. 134

Figure 3.18  Comparison of the molecular mass of recombinant MD-ACO3 expressed using the pGEX Vector with MD-ACO3 expressed using the pProEX-1 vector, after separation on a 10 to 20% SDS-PAGE gradient gel .............................................. 135

Figure 3.19  SDS-PAGE of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 following Metal Chelate Chromatography .................. 136

Figure 3.20  Separation of active recombinant MD-ACO using a Mono Q Anion Exchange column .................. 138

Figure 3.21  Recombinant His-tagged proteins after purification by metal Chelate Affinity Chromatography, Sephadex G-25 and Anion Exchange Chromatography .................. 140

Figure 3.22  Detection of ACC oxidase in apple fruit and apple leaves using antibody raised against MD-ACO1 on western blot .................. 141

Figure 3.23  Detection, using western analysis, of ACC oxidase in apple fruit and apple leaves by an antibody raised against MD-ACO3 .......... 142

Figure 3.24  Accumulation of MD-ACO1/MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 in various tissues of apple ............................................. 144

Figure 3.25  Cleavage of the histidine tag from recombinant MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 using tobacco etch virus (TEV) protease, and subsequent evaluation of enzymatic activity ............................................. 145
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Figure</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3.26</td>
<td>Effect of MD-ACO concentration on the V_{max} of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.27</td>
<td>Activity assays of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 without the presence of sodium bicarbonate (NaHCO₃) in the reaction mixture</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.28</td>
<td>Recombinant MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 activity as a function of ACC concentration</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.29</td>
<td>Recombinant MD-ACO2 activity as a function of ACC concentration, expressed in the pGEX vector</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.30</td>
<td>Thermal stability of <em>Malus domestica</em> ACC oxidase at incubation temperatures of 25 °C, 35 °C and 45 °C</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.31</td>
<td>Changes in chlorophyll concentration as an indicator of leaf maturation in <em>Malus domestica</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.32</td>
<td>Changes in chlorophyll concentration as an indicator of leaf senescence in <em>Malus domestica</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.33</td>
<td>Chlorophyll concentration as an indicator of leaf senescence in <em>Malus domestica</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.34</td>
<td>Leaf carbon assimilation in <em>Malus domestica</em> as an indicator of leaf senescence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.35</td>
<td>ACC oxidase accumulation in the leaves of <em>Malus domestica</em>, from early to mid-season, using antibodies raised against MD-ACO1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.36</td>
<td>ACC oxidase accumulation in the leaves of <em>Malus domestica</em>, from early to mid-season, using antibodies raised against MD-ACO3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.37</td>
<td>Changes in ACC oxidase protein accumulation in leaf tissue from mid-season through to senescence (2003) in <em>Malus domestica</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.39</td>
<td>Gene expression and protein accumulation of ACC oxidase from mid-season through to senescence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.40</td>
<td>Circadian rhythm of ACC oxidase gene expression over 24 h in the leaves of <em>Malus domestica</em> (November, 2003)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.41</td>
<td>Circadian rhythm of ACC oxidase gene expression over 24 h in the leaves of <em>Malus domestica</em> (April, 2004)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.42</td>
<td>Circadian rhythm of ACC oxidase gene expression over 24 h in the leaves of <em>Malus domestica</em> (fruit removed from the tree; April, 2005)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.43</td>
<td>Circadian rhythm of ACC oxidase gene expression over 24 h in the leaves of <em>Malus domestica</em> (with fruit; April, 2005)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
# LIST OF TABLES

Table 1.1 Summary of some properties of ACC oxidase purified from apple ........... 33
Table 1.2 Summary of the requirements of apple ACC oxidase for co-substrate and co-factors .......................................................... 35
Table 2.1 Names and addresses of the manufacturers of reagents and specialized equipment .......................................................... 41
Table 2.2 Primers used in this study ........................................................................ 52
Table 3.1 Distribution of colonies and clones containing ACC oxidase inserts from apple leaf tissue .......................................................... 97
Table 3.2A Results of a nucleotide BLAST search against JEB:α, 819 bp cDNA sequence .......................................................... 99
Table 3.2B Results of a nucleotide BLAST search against JEB:β, 816 bp cDNA sequence ........................................................................ 100
Table 3.3A Partial cDNAs of JEB:α and JEB:β aligned with ACC oxidase sequences from the NCBI Genebank database ........................................ 102
Table 3.3B Nucleotide identity (%) between JEB:α and JEB:β and ACC oxidase sequences from three cultivars of *Malus domestica* ........................................ 103
Table 3.4 Identity (%) between EST 153710 and the cDNA X61390 (pAP4), JEB:α:AF015787 and JEB:β ........................................................................ 105
Table 3.5 Identity (%) between ESTs (192136 and 179706) and the cDNA pAP4, JEB:α and JEB:β sequences ........................................................................ 107
Table 3.6 Identity amongst the genomic DNA sequences of *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3* ........................................................................ 110
Table 3.7A Opening reading frame nucleotide sequence identities of *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3* ........................................................................ 112
Table 3.7B Nucleotide sequence identities of the 3′-UTR of *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3* ........................................................................ 112
Table 3.7C Translated amino acid sequence identities of *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3* ........................................................................ 112
Table 3.8A Results of a nucleotide BLAST search against the *Malus domestica* ACC oxidase (*MD-ACO1*) 942 bp cDNA entire open reading frame sequence ........................................................................ 113
Table 3.8B Results of a nucleotide BLAST search against the *Malus domestica* ACC oxidase (*MD-ACO2*) 990 bp cDNA entire open reading frame sequence ........................................................................ 114
Table 3.8C Results of a nucleotide BLAST search against the *Malus domestica* ACC oxidase (*MD-ACO3*) 966 bp cDNA entire open reading frame sequence ........................................................................ 114
Table 3.9  A comparison of MD-ACO1, (putative) MD-ACO2 and (putative) MD-ACO3 ......................................................... 132
Table 3.10  NaCl concentration at which MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 elute from the Mono Q column at pH 7.5, compared with the estimated pI of each of the proteins .................................................. 139
Table 3.11  Summary of substrate and co-factor requirements for MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 for optimal activity .................................................. 149
Table 3.12  Summary of kinetic properties of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3. .............................................................................. 152
Table 3.13  Some kinetic properties using the pGEX and pProEX-1 expression vectors ................................................................. 153
Table 3.14  Summary of thermal stability of Malus domestica ACC oxidases at incubation temperatures of 25 °C, 35 °C and 45 °C ......................................... 156
Table 4.1  Comparison of the kinetic properties of recombinant and purified ACOs from apple and other species .................................................. 189
Table 4.2  Summary of the specific activities of ACOs .................................................. 191
**LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( A_{595} )</td>
<td>Absorbance at 595 ( \lambda ) nm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACC</td>
<td>1-aminocyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>ACC Oxidase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACS</td>
<td>ACC Synthase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AEC</td>
<td>1-amino-2-ethyl-cyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AdoMet</td>
<td>S-adenosyl-L-methionine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AEC</td>
<td>1-amino-2-ethyl-cyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amp(^{100})</td>
<td>Ampicillin (100 mg mL(^{-1}))</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>amu</td>
<td>Atomic mass unit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ANS</td>
<td>Anthocyanidin synthase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>APS</td>
<td>Ammonium persulphate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BCIP</td>
<td>5-bromo-4-chloro-3-indoyl phosphate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BLAST</td>
<td>Basic Logical Alignment Search Tool</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Borax</td>
<td>di-Sodium tetraborate decahydrate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bp</td>
<td>Base-pair</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BSA</td>
<td>Bovine serum albumin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( ^\circ C )</td>
<td>Degrees Celsius</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ca.</td>
<td>circa (approximately)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAPS</td>
<td>3-(Cyclohexylamino)propanesulfonic acid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBB</td>
<td>Coomassie Brilliant Blue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cv.</td>
<td>Cultivar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ci</td>
<td>1 Curie = ( 3.7 \times 10^{10} ) disintegrations per second</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CTAB</td>
<td>Hexadecyltrimethylammonium bromide</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DAFB</td>
<td>Days after full bloom</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cDNA</td>
<td>DNA complimentary to a RNA, synthesized from RNA by reverse transcription <em>in vitro</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dATP</td>
<td>2'-deoxyadenosine 5'-triphosphate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dCTP</td>
<td>2'-deoxycytidine 5'-triphosphate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dGTP</td>
<td>2'-deoxyguanosine 5'-triphosphate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DAOCS</td>
<td>Deacetoxycephalosporin C synthase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DEAE</td>
<td>Diethylaminoethyl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DEPC</td>
<td>Diethyl pyrocarbonate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DMF</td>
<td>N,N-dimethyl formamide</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DMSO</td>
<td>Dimethyl sulfoxide</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DNA</td>
<td>Deoxyribonucleic acid</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
DNase: Deoxyribonuclease
DSBH: Double stranded beta helix (jellyroll)
dNTP: 2’-deoxynucleotide 5’-triphosphate
DTT: Dithiothreitol
dTTP: 2’-deoxythymidine 5’-triphosphate
DW: Dry weight
E. coli: Escherichia coli
EDTA: Ethylenediaminetetra acetic acid
EFE: Ethylene forming enzyme
EIN: Ethylene insensitive
EST: Expressed Sequenced Tag
ExPASy: Expert protein analysis system: proteomics server of the Swiss Institute of Bioinformatics (SIB)
FID: Flame ionization detector
FPLC: Fast protein liquid chromatography
FW: Fresh weight
GACC: 1-(gamma-L-glutamylamino)cyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid
g: Acceleration due to gravity (9.8 m/s²)
g: Gram
GC: Gas Chromatography
GCG: Gene Computer Group
GST: Glutathione S-Transferase
GUS: E. coli β-glucuronidase
h: Hour
His-tag: Histidine tagged
IgG: Immunoglobulin G
IEC: Internal ethylene concentration
IPTG: Isopropyl-β-D-thiogalactopyranoside (C₉H₁₆O₃S)
IPNS: Isopenicillin N synthase
Kb: Kilo base-pairs
kDa: Kilo Daltons
Kᵢ: Inhibition constant
Kₘ: The Michaelis constant (substrate needed to occupy 50% of the active sites)
L: Litre
LB: Luria-Bertani (media or broth)
Log: Logarithm
M: Molar (moles per litre)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MACC</td>
<td>1-(malonylamino) cyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MCS</td>
<td>Multiple cloning site</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO</td>
<td><em>Malus domestic</em> ACC Oxidase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mol</td>
<td>mole (amount of a substance, Avogadro’s number)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μmol</td>
<td>Micromole</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mg</td>
<td>Milligram</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μg</td>
<td>Microgram</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mL</td>
<td>Millilitre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μL</td>
<td>Microlitre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milli-Q water</td>
<td>Water purified by a Milli-Q ion exchange column</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>min</td>
<td>Minute</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MOPS</td>
<td>Sodium [3-(N-Morpholino)]propanesulphonate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr</td>
<td>Relative molecular mass (g mol⁻¹)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>Number of replicate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NBT</td>
<td>p-nitro blue tetrazolium chloride</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NCBI</td>
<td>National Center for Biotechnology Information</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ng</td>
<td>Nanograms</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ni-NTA</td>
<td>Nickel-nitrilotriacetic acid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nL</td>
<td>Nanolitres</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nmol</td>
<td>Nanomole</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-ODD</td>
<td>2-oxoglutarate dependent dioxygenase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OD₉₅₀</td>
<td>Optical Density at 595 nm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ORF</td>
<td>Open reading frame</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PA</td>
<td>1,10-phenanthroline</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PAGE</td>
<td>Polyacrylamide gel electrophoresis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PBS</td>
<td>Phosphate buffered saline (50 mM sodium phosphate, pH 7.4 containing 250 mM NaCl)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PBS-T</td>
<td>Phosphate buffered saline containing 0.5 % (v/v) Tween-20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PCR</td>
<td>Polymerase chain reaction</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pers. Comm.</td>
<td>Personal communication</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pH</td>
<td>-Log (H⁺)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pI</td>
<td>Isoelectric point</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pmol</td>
<td>Picomole</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pn</td>
<td>Net photosynthesis (carbon assimilation measurements)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ppm</td>
<td>Parts per million</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PVDF</td>
<td>Polyvinylidene difluoride</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PVP-40</td>
<td>Polyvinyl pyrrolidone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PVPP</td>
<td>Polyvinyl polypyrrolidone</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3' RACE = Three prime-rapid amplification of cDNA ends
RNA = Ribonucleic acid
RNase = Ribonuclease
RO = Reverse osmosis
RT-PCR = Reverse Transcriptase-polymerase chain reaction
s = Second
SAM = S-adenosyl-L-methionine
SAP = Shrimp alkaline phosphatase
SDS = Sodium dodecyl sulphate
SEM = Standard error of the mean
SSPE = Saline, sodium phosphate, and EDTA buffer
TEMED = N, N', N'', N''-tetramethylethylenediamine
Tm = Melting temperature
TEV = Tobacco etch virus
Tris = Tris (hydroxymethyl) aminomethane
Triton X-100 = Octylphenoxy polyethoxyethanol
Tween-20 = Polyoxyethylenesorbitan monolaurate
U = Unit (commercial enzymes are in U μL−1, where unit is based on enzyme activity)
UTR = Untranslated region
UV = Ultra violet light
V = Volt (m2 kg s−3 A−1)
Vmax = Maximum velocity
v/v = Volume per volume
w/v = Weight per volume
w/w = Weight per weight
X-Gal = 5-Bromo-4-chloro-3-indolyl β-D-galactopyranoside
# Amino Acid Abbreviations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Amino Acid (AA)</th>
<th>Three-letter abbreviation</th>
<th>One-letter abbreviation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Alanine</td>
<td>Ala</td>
<td>A</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arginine</td>
<td>Arg</td>
<td>R</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asparagine</td>
<td>Asn</td>
<td>N</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aspartic acid</td>
<td>Asp</td>
<td>D</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cysteine</td>
<td>Cys</td>
<td>C</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glutamine</td>
<td>Gln</td>
<td>Q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glutamic acid</td>
<td>Glu</td>
<td>E</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glycine</td>
<td>Gly</td>
<td>G</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Histidine</td>
<td>His</td>
<td>H</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isoleucine</td>
<td>Ile</td>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leucine</td>
<td>Leu</td>
<td>L</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lysine</td>
<td>Lys</td>
<td>K</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Methionine</td>
<td>Met</td>
<td>M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phenylalanine</td>
<td>Phe</td>
<td>F</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Proline</td>
<td>Pro</td>
<td>P</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Serine</td>
<td>Ser</td>
<td>S</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Threonine</td>
<td>Thr</td>
<td>T</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tryptophan</td>
<td>Trp</td>
<td>W</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tyrosine</td>
<td>Tyr</td>
<td>Y</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Valine</td>
<td>Val</td>
<td>V</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Chapter One INTRODUCTION

1.1 Ethylene in Plant Development

Ethylene (C$_2$H$_4$), the simplest unsaturated hydrocarbon, was identified as the active component in illuminating/coal gas which caused abnormal horizontal growth in pea seedlings by Neljubov 1901 (cited in Abeles, 1973), while working in St. Petersburg. He demonstrated the “triple response” by exposing etiolated pea seedlings to different concentrations of the gas, which resulted in arrested elongational growth (at 0.1 µL L$^{-1}$), lateral swelling of elongating parts (at 1.0 µL L$^{-1}$) and loss of normal gravitropic responses (at 10 µL L$^{-1}$) (Osborne, 1989a). Proof that plants produce ethylene was eventually provided using chemical absorptive techniques to trap and analyse the gases released from ripening apples (Gane, 1934). Following the application of gas chromatography to ethylene analysis (Burg and Stolwijk, 1959; Huelin and Kennett, 1959), the phytohormone was found to play an important role in regulating many plant processes (Abeles, 1973; 1992; Kende and Zeevart, 1997).

Ethylene is produced in all higher plants (Osborne, 1989a), with the exception of Potamogeton pectinatus which is unable to produce ethylene and yet survives successfully in the environment (Summers et al., 1996). In climacteric fruit, ethylene is necessary for the coordination and completion of ripening as illustrated by the slowing or inhibition of ripening in ethylene-suppressed transgenic plants (Oeller et al., 1991; Picton et al., 1993; Theologis et al., 1993; Bleecker and Kende, 2000; Giovannoni, 2000; Alexander and Grierson, 2002), and via analysis of inhibitors of ethylene biosynthesis and perception (Yang, 1985; Giovannoni, 2001). It may also be important for non-climacteric fruit ripening (Chervin et al., 2004), long considered and ethylene-independent process (Lelievre et al., 1997). Ethylene is involved in the abscission of apple and peach fruitlets (Cin et al., 2005; Bonghi et al., 2000), and regulates the timing of abscission (Osborne, 1989b; 1991; Henderson et al., 2001). Also the biosynthesis of fruit pigments, textures, flavours and the volatile esters associated with aroma in climacteric fruits are ethylene-dependent (Lelievre et al., 1997; Defilippi et al., 2005; Park et al., 2006). The hormone can modify programmed leaf senescence by upregulating senescence-associated genes (SAG) and down regulating photosynthetic-associated genes (PAG) (Bleecker et al., 1988; Grbic and Bleecker, 1995; Miller et al., 1999; Hunter et al., 1999; Huang et al., 2001; Gepstein et al., 2003; Grbic, 2003; Jing et al., 2005), and promoting floral tissue senescence (Sisler et al., 1996; Sisler and Serek, 1997; Hunter et al., 2002). Other processes range from seed germination, including breaking seed dormancy, and seedling emergence (Harpham et al., 1991; Kepeczynski and Kepeczynska, 1997; Matilla, 2000; Petruzelli et al., 2000), shoot elongation and the regulation of epinastic growth responses (Sanders et al., 1990; Petruzelli et
al., 1994; Woeste et al., 1999); root production and growth, and root growth initiation (Sarquis et al., 1992; Zacarias and Reid, 1992; Finlayson et al., 1996; Dolan, 1997). This gaseous hormone can affect plant tissues some distance from its site of biosynthesis (Tieman and Klee, 1999), and a stressed plant's chances of survival are decreased without the ability to initiate ethylene-related responses (see review by Grichko and Glick, 2001). With such a wide range of effects in higher plants, the regulation of ethylene biosynthesis, perception and signal transduction is complex (Johnson and Ecker, 1998), and these aspects of the hormone biology will be introduced below.

1.2 Ethylene Perception and Signal Transduction

1.2.1 Ethylene Perception

Studies using radiolabelled ethylene demonstrated that plants had ethylene binding sites (Sisler, 1991), but the inability to purify the binding component(s) and to identify the pathway components by biochemical approaches proved recalcitrant (Jiang and Fu, 2000). To date ethylene receptors, pathway intermediaries and transcription factors have been elucidated by screening mutants with an altered triple response, predominantly of Arabidopsis and Lycopersicon esculentum, but also in other species such as Medicago truncatula, peach, rice and melon (see review by Bleecker and Kende, 2000; Stepanova and Ecker, 2000; Ciardi and Klee, 2001; Alexander and Grierson, 2002; Guo and Ecker, 2004).

In Arabidopsis the ethylene triple response (etr) and ethylene insensitive (ein) mutants were first isolated (Bleecker et al., 1988; Guzman and Ecker, 1990), and have led to the identification of the ethylene receptor genes ETR1 (Chang et al., 1993), ETR2 (Sakai et al., 1998), the ethylene response sensors (ERS1 and ERS2) and EIN4 (Hua et al., 1995; 1998). When the ETR1 protein was over-expressed in yeast, and the cells treated with [C14]-ethylene, evidence was gathered that the transformants could bind ethylene (Schaller and Bleecker, 1995). Indeed all five ethylene receptors in Arabidopsis have been shown to bind ethylene (Schaller and Bleecker, 1995; Hall et al., 2000), and the apparent half-life for dissociation of ethylene from ETR1 is at least 12.5 h (Schaller and Bleecker, 1995). High affinity binding of ethylene is mediated by a copper (Cu') cofactor which acts as a transition metal. The copper ion is chelated by a conserved cysteine at position 65 (C65), and a conserved histidine at position 69 (H69), located in the second transmembrane domain of the ETR1 protein (Rodriguez et al., 1999). A copper transporting ATPase, (RAN1) in Arabidopsis, is thought to deliver copper for the assembly of functional ethylene receptors (Schaller and Kieber, 2002). ETR1 contains three membrane spanning regions at the N-terminal end of the protein, forms homodimers via disulphide bridges (Schaller et al., 1995) and is localized to the endoplasmic reticulum (Chen et al., 2002). The
ETR1 receptor shares homology with the prokaryotic family of two-component histidine kinase receptors in bacteria (Wurgler-Murphy and Saito, 1997; Pirring, 1999; Schaller, 2000; Urao et al., 2000). Two-component regulators are typically composed of a sensor protein with an input domain that receives signals and a catalytic transmitter domain that autophosphorylates an internal histidine residue. The second component, a response regulator protein, is composed of a receiver domain that receives phosphate from the transmitter on a conserved aspartate residue and an output domain that mediates the response depending on the phosphorylation state of the receiver (Chang and Meyerowitz, 1995; Stock et al., 2000). Histidine kinase activity of ETR1 has been biochemically confirmed (Gamble et al., 1998). For some of the ethylene receptors the receiver domain is the carboxyl-terminal domain (Chang and Stadle, 2003). Subfamily-1 receptors comprising ETR1 and ERS1 (also localized to the endoplasmic reticulum in melon; Ma et al., 2006), have three hydrophobic subdomains at the N terminus, where ethylene binding occurs, and contain all five of the functionally defined histidine kinase sequence motifs. In contrast subfamily-2, which includes ETR2, ERS2 and EIN4, have an additional hydrophobic extension at the N-terminus, and contain only one or two of the histidine kinase sequence motifs (see review by Wang et al., 2002). The crystal structure of the ETR1 receiver domain indicates that they form dimers (Muller-Dieckmann et al., 1999). One member of each subfamily (ERS1 and ERS2) lack receiver domains (Chang and Bleecker, 2004). Interestingly, members of the photoreceptor family, the phytochromes, have a histidine kinase domain related to two-component systems but exhibit serine/threonine kinase activity (Fankhauser et al., 1999), which supports the notion that the ETR2 class of receptors may function not as histidine kinases but possibly as serine/threonine kinases. For example, autophosphorylation of a tobacco subfamily-2 ethylene receptor has been demonstrated on serine and threonines in vitro (Zhang et al., 2004a), and all five receptor proteins from Arabidopsis have been shown to display autophosphorylation in vitro. Autophosphorylation is predominantly on serine residues (Moussatche and Klee, 2004), and mutation of the histidine residues conserved in two-component systems does not abolish this serine autophosphorylation function (Moussatche and Klee, 2004).

The five Arabidopsis ethylene receptors are functionally active and differentially regulated (Schaller and Bleecker, 1995; Hua and Meyerowitz, 1998). Although the elimination of ethylene receptors activates ethylene responses (Hua and Meyerowitz, 1998; Schaller and Kieber, 2002), and an increase in the number of receptors is thought to desensitize the pathway (Ciardi et al., 2000), the absence of ethylene results in the inactivation of ethylene responses (Bleecker et al., 1999). Binder et al. (2004a; 2004b) propose a model in which clustered receptors act cooperatively during growth recovery after ethylene withdrawal.
In tomato, six ETR like genes have been isolated and designated as LeETR1, LeETR2 and LeETR3, historically the never-ripe gene, denoted as NR (Wilkinson et al., 1995; Payton et al., 1996; Zhou et al., 1996; Tieman and Klee, 1999; Ciardi and Klee, 2001), LeETR4, LeETR5 and LeETR6 (Lashbrook et al., 1998; Tieman et al., 2000, Moussatche and Klee, 2004). LeETR1 and LeETR2 are similar to ETR1 in Arabidopsis, and LeETR3, like ERS1 and ERS2, is not associated with a receiver domain, while LeETR4 is an ETR2 class member with a receiver domain (Wang et al., 2002). Interestingly, peach ETR1 mRNA undergoes unusual alternative splicing that potentially results in three different mature transcripts (Bassett et al., 2002; Rasori et al., 2002).

Two studies describe the identification of a new class of protein in Arabidopsis (Resnick et al., 2006) and in tomato (Barry and Giovannoni, 2006) that interacts with ethylene receptors to negatively regulate ethylene responses. In Arabidopsis the protein restores activity to the dominant ethylene insensitive etr1 mutant and is thus designated REVERSION-TO-ETHYLENE SENSITIVITY1 (RTE1) (Resnick et al., 2006). In tomato, a Green-ripe mutant (Gr), identified as having a 5′ deletion, caused ectopic expression of Green-ripe (GR) in all tissues. Although the reduced ethylene responsiveness occurred predominantly in fruit tissues, resulting in the inhibition of fruit ripening (never ripe), a subset of ethylene responses associated with floral senescence, abscission and root elongation are also impacted in mutant plants, but to a lesser extent (Barry and Giovannoni, 2006), suggesting tissue-specific modulation of ethylene responses. These results are consistent with a previous study by Barry et al. (2005) in which tomato fruit do not respond to ethylene whereas seedlings show a normal response in the presence of the Gr mutant. GR is a member of the same family as RTE1, both are integral membrane proteins and modify the action of two-component regulators (receptors) in all eukaryotes (excluding fungi) (Klee, 2006).

1.2.2 Ethylene Signal Transduction

Through screening T-DNA insertion lines of Arabidopsis, one phenotype was identified that displayed the triple response without ethylene treatment, and therefore the “constitutive triple response” (ctr1) mutant was identified (Kieber, 1993). Epistatic studies revealed that the CTR1 gene product acts downstream of the ethylene receptors (Kieber et al., 1993; Hua et al., 1995; Roman et al., 1995; 1998; Sakai et al., 1998). The comparison with bacterial two component systems suggests a phospho-relay may pass the signal downstream. The presence of ethylene has been shown transiently to increase polypeptide phosphorylation in vivo (Raz and Fluhr, 1993). The carboxyl half of the CTR1 protein contains a kinase domain with similarity to the Raf family of serine/threonine kinases that function in mitogen-activated kinase (MAPK)
cascades in animals (Kieber, 1993; Huang et al., 2003), they also show some tyrosine kinase activity, and may autophosphorylate on both threonine and tyrosine (Wu et al., 1991; for a review of MAP kinases in plants refer to Morris, 2001). Based on this similarity, CTR1 may function as a mitogen-activated protein kinase kinase kinase (MAP3K) in analogous fashion to Raf, and initiate signalling through a MAPK cascade. Ethylene has been shown to stimulate MAPK like activity in Arabidopsis (Novikova et al., 2000; Ouaked et al., 2003), which suggests that both negative and positive transductions may be mediated through MAP kinase cascades (Novikova et al., 2000; Ouaked et al., 2003). The N-terminus of CTR1 was found capable of directly interacting with both the histidine kinase and receiver domains of ETR1, and the histidine kinase domain of ERS1 (Clark et al., 1998). The current model of hormonal action suggests that in the absence of ethylene the CTR1 interacts with the receptor (Schaller and Kieber, 2002; Huang et al., 2003), possibly in response to the phosphorylation state and/or conformational changes in the receptor, or CTR1 could be complexed with receptors but regulated through intermediatories (Schaller and Kieber, 2002) and the response pathway is blocked. Binding of ethylene by the receptors releases the negative CTR1 regulation allowing ethylene responses to occur (Bleecker et al., 1999). Association of the CTR1 protein with the endoplasmic reticulum has been observed using immunoblot assays (Gao et al., 2003), which co-location with the ETR1 receptor and supports the view that CTR1 interacts directly with the receptor.

Two tomato sequences showing significant sequence homology with Arabidopsis CTR1 have been reported by a group in England (TCTR2; Lin et al., 1998; Alexander and Grierson, 2002), and a group in France (ER50; Zegzouti et al., 1999). Leclercq et al. (2002) expressed ER50, designated LeCTR1, in the Arabidopsis ctr1 mutant under the direction of the 35S promoter which restored normal ethylene signalling. In contrast to the constitutive expression of the CTR1 gene in Arabidopsis (Kieber et al., 1993), in tomato the CTR1 gene is expressed differentially (Leclercq et al., 2002).

EIN2 acts downstream of CTR1 and encodes an integral membrane protein of 1294 amino acids (Alonso et al., 1999), predicted to be located at the nuclear membrane (Chang and Shockey, 1999). EIN2 contains 12 predicted transmembrane domains in the N-terminal third of the polypeptide, a region that exhibits significant similarity to the Nramp family of cation transporters. However, experiments to detect metal transporting activity in EIN2 have failed (Thomine et al., 2000). By contrast the carboxyl-terminal hydrophilic region contains a coiled-coil structure, which has a role in protein-protein interactions, but generally does not show homology to any known protein (Schaller and Kieber, 2002; Shibuya et al., 2004). EIN2 is a single-copy gene and is the only gene known in which loss-of-function mutations result in
complete loss of ethylene responsiveness (Chen and Bleeker, 1995; Roman et al., 1995).
EIN2 has been found to be a positive component in ethylene signalling in rice (Jun et al., 2004).
Expression of EIN2 mRNA is spatially and temporally regulated in Petunia hybrida during plant development (Shibuya et al., 2004), indicating the central role of EIN2 in ethylene signal transduction. Genetic evidence has shown the EIN2 acts downstream of CTR1 and upstream of EIN3 (Wang et al., 2002).

The cloning of EIN3 provided direct evidence for nuclear regulation in the ethylene transduction pathway (Chao et al., 1997). EIN3 is a plant specific DNA binding protein (Guo and Ecker, 2003), and is the founding member of a family that contains at least five additional EIN3-like proteins (EILs) (Chao et al., 1997; Wang et al., 2002). EIN3 contains acidic proline rich and glutamine rich domains consistent with transcriptional activation domains. Direct evidence EIN3 and EILs function as transcription factors comes from the finding that they bind to a promoter element (the primary ethylene response element; PERE) in the ethylene response factor 1 (ERF1) gene (Solano et al., 1998). In Arabidopsis EIN3 protein levels increase rapidly in response to ethylene, on condition that receptors (ETRI and EIN4), CTR1, EIN2 (and the cytosolic proteins EIN5 and EIN6) are functional. Conversely, in the absence of ethylene, EIN3 is quickly degraded via a ubiquitin protease pathway, mediated by F-box proteins (EBF1 and EBF2) (Guo and Ecker, 2003). ERFs (also referred to as ethylene response element binding proteins; EREBPs) are a family of transcription factor proteins (Fujimoto et al., 2000; Nakano et al., 2006) which have been found to bind to a GCC-box, and while some members such as ERF1 function as transcriptional activators other members function as repressors (Fujimoto et al., 2000). Some ERFs contain GCC-boxes in their promoters, suggesting the existence of transcriptional cascades that involves EIN3/EILs and the ERFs (Solano et al., 1998; Binder et al., 2004b).

### 1.3 Ethylene Biosynthesis in Higher Plants

In higher plants, ethylene biosynthesis follows the pathway from methionine to S-adenosylmethionine (SAM), to l-aminocyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid (ACC) to ethylene (Adams and Yang, 1979) (refer Figure 1.1).

Direct evidence that ethylene was derived from carbon 3 and carbon 4 (C-3 and C-4) of methionine in vivo was provided by feeding labelled methionine to apple fruit tissue (Lieberman et al., 1966). In similar experiments where labelled methionine was fed to apple fruit tissue, the formation of 5’-methylthiodenosine (MTA) and 5-methylthioribose (MTR) in parallel with ethylene production, confirmed that SAM was a substrate in the biosynthesis of ethylene.
Figure 1.1: Ethylene Biosynthesis and the Yang (Methionine) Cycle
(modified from Miyazaki and Yang, 1987)
Introduction

(Adams and Yang, 1977). Interestingly, unripe apple was found to be incapable of producing MTA, MTR or ethylene from administered methionine. Advantage was taken of the well known fact that a nitrogen atmosphere causes a cessation in ethylene production by pears and apples and the subsequent re-exposure to air results in a surge of ethylene production. Again using labelled methionine fed to apple tissue, MTR and a compound later identified as ACC (Lizada and Yang, 1979) were formed on exposure to a nitrogen atmosphere without the concomitant production of ethylene (Adams and Yang, 1979). These experiments showed that the conversion of ACC to ethylene in apple tissue was oxygen-dependent. Later, the carboxyl carbon of ACC (C-1 of methionine) was found to be liberated as CO₂ (Peiser et al., 1984) and the production of cyanide (C-2 and N-1 of methionine) was confirmed (Pirrung, 1985). Cyanide in plants is rapidly converted to β-cyanoalanine and can further be converted into asparagine. The observed discrepancy between the amount of methionine available to produce ethylene with the actual amount of ethylene produced by apples (Baur and Yang, 1972) lead to investigations using labelled MTR (³H on the methyl group and ¹⁴C on the ribose moiety) showed that both radioisotopes were incorporated equally into methionine in apple tissue, and provided evidence for sulphur recycling in plants (Yung et al., 1982). The methionine salvage pathway (known as the Yang or methionine cycle) is closely coupled to the ethylene biosynthetic pathway (Figure 1.1).

There are three enzymes in the ethylene biosynthetic pathway (each of which will be discussed later), SAM synthetase which converts methionine to SAM, ACC synthase which converts SAM to ACC, and ACC oxidase (ACO) which converts ACC to ethylene (Figure 1.1). Ethylene can regulate the activity of ACO (Liu et al., 1985a), ACC synthase (Butler, 1984) as well as ACC-malonyl-transferase (Liu et al., 1985a; 1985b). ACC synthase is considered to be the major control point in the ethylene biosynthetic pathway, exhibiting the classic rate-limiting properties of rapid induction and rapid degradation. More recently, evidence for the notion that ACO is regulated is supported by the existence of small multigene families which have been observed to be both developmentally and environmentally responsive, exhibiting clear differential expression, rather than the widely held view that the activity of ACO is always constitutive.

1.3.1 SAM Synthetase

S-adenosyl-methionine (SAM; also known as AdoMet) is synthesized by the transfer of an adenosyl group from ATP to the sulphur atom of methionine in a reaction catalyzed by SAM synthetase. SAM synthetase is found in both prokaryotic and eukaryotic organisms (Tabor and Tabor, 1984) and two isoforms have been found to be differentially expressed in
Saccharomyces cerevisiae (Thomas and Surdin-Kerjan, 1991). SAM is not only used for ethylene biosynthesis (Yang and Hoffman, 1984; Kende, 1993), but is also decarboxylated and used for the biosynthesis of polyamines (Miyazaki and Yang, 1987) (Figure 1.1). The major forms of polyamines are putrescine, spermine and spermidine and they are found in every plant cell (Pandey et al., 2000). SAM, as the major donor of methyl groups, is used ubiquitously for the methylation of proteins, carbohydrates, lipids and nucleic acids, and not surprisingly SAM synthetase has been classified by Fluhr and Mattoo (1996) as a housekeeping enzyme. However, only a minor portion of SAM is thought to be utilised for ACC production, and so it has been suggested that SAM levels are not rate limiting for ethylene biosynthesis (Yu and Yang, 1979; Pelman et al., 1989). The application of polyamines has been shown to inhibit ethylene production in some plants (Pandey et al., 2000). For example, in carnation flowers the application of spermine delayed flower senescence, reduced ethylene production, ACC content, and activity and transcript levels of both ACS and ACO (Lee et al., 1997). However, reduction in ethylene production and ACC levels could be a result of the upregulation of SAM decarboxylase, rather than anything to do with SAM synthetase, since the downregulation of SAM synthetase would necessarily reduce polyamine biosynthesis and disrupt transmethylation reactions throughout the plant. Interestingly, Huan et al., (2001) report the enhanced expression of the SAM decarboxylase gene during sweet potato leaf senescence. In contrast, SAM synthetase genes have been shown to increase in response to drought stress (Mayne et al., 1996), salt stress (Espartero et al., 1994), fungal and bacterial elicitors (Kawalleck et al., 1992; Arimura et al., 2002), mechanical stimuli (Kim et al., 1994), exposure to ozone (Tuomainen et al., 1997) and during climacteric fruit ripening (Whittaker et al., 1997), indicating that SAM synthetase is induced during periods of enhanced ethylene synthesis (Boerjan et al., 1994).

SAM synthetase is encoded by a small multigene family in plants which is differentially expressed in response to developmental and environmental stimuli (Peleman et al., 1989; Schroder et al., 1997). For example, differential expression has been observed during senescence in carnation flowers (Woodson et al., 1992), in response to treatment of pea ovaries with indole-3-acetic acid (IAA) (Gomez-Gomez and Carrasco, 1998), and in fruit of Actinidia chinensis SAM synthetase transcripts were shown to be induced by exposure to exogenous ethylene (Whittaker et al., 1997). However, as vital as SAM synthetase is for the biosynthesis of ethylene, its many other biochemical commitments cannot be overlooked when assessing its regulatory role in this pathway.
1.3.2 ACC Synthase (ACS)

ACS (SAM methylthioadenosine-lyase) is a pyridoxal-5'-phosphate (PLP) requiring enzyme, which is present in the cytosolic fractions, and catalyzes the reaction which converts SAM into ACC and MTA (Adams and Yang 1977; 1979; Yang and Hoffman, 1984)(Figure 1.1). In common with other PLP-dependent enzymes, ACS is competitively inhibited by aminoethoxyvinylglycine (AVG) and aminoethoxyacetic acid (AOA) (Imaseki, 1999). Also, during the catalysis of SAM to ACC and MTA small amounts of the highly reactive intermediary, vinylglycine (the aminobutyl portion of SAM) is produced (in a 1:30,000 ratio with ACC) which covalently binds to the active site of ACS resulting in irreversible inhibition of enzyme activity (Satoh and Yang, 1988; 1989a; 1989b), so that at high substrate concentrations ACS activity is reduced (Boller et al., 1979) and the inhibition is time dependent (Boller, 1985; Satoh and Esashi, 1986). In the biosynthesis of ethylene, an obvious competitor of ACS for substrate is SAM decarboxylase (amongst many others, as SAM is a ubiquitous molecule in nature and the major donor of methyl groups), which is important as the decarboxylation of SAM commits the molecule to the formation of polyamines (Miyazaki and Yang, 1987) (Figure 1.1), essential for plant growth and development (Pandey et al., 2000).

The physiological functions of ethylene and the polyamines are distinct and at times antagonistic, particularly during leaf and flower senescence and during fruit ripening (Pandey et al., 2000), and so the regulation of ACC synthase and SAM decarboxylase is tightly coupled.

ACS was first identified in homogenates of ripening tomato pericarp tissue (Boller et al., 1979; Yu et al., 1979), and subsequently purified, after a wounding pre-treatment, from which two monoclonal antibodies recognising different epitopes of the protein were raised and used to develop a sensitive ELISA for ACS (Bleecker et al., 1986; 1988). The purified protein was found to be active as a monomer with a molecular mass of 50 kDa by SDS-PAGE, but translational products yielded a protein of 56 kDa (Bleecker et al., 1986; 1988), suggesting that ACS undergoes post-translational processing in vivo. Consistent with these findings, the molecular mass of ACS from winter squash also varied from 50 kDa in vivo to 58 kDa for the translated products (Nakajima et al., 1988). While an active ACS purified from zucchini was found to have a molecular mass of 86 kDa by gel filtration, that of the denatured enzyme 46 kDa, indicating that this ACS isoform in zucchini fruit is active as a homodimer (Sato et al., 1991). More recently it has been shown that, at least eight Arabidopsis ACS isozymes function as homodimers (Yamagami et al., 2003; Ecker, 2004), and may also form functional heterodimers (Tsuchisaka and Theologis, 2004a). Although there was no indication of proteolytic modification for an ACS purified from apple fruit, found to be active as a monomer, with a molecular weight of 52 ± 4 kDa (Yip et al., 1991; Dong et al., 1991), the
characterisation of the apple enzyme expressed in *Escherichia coli* (*E. coli*) (White *et al.*, 1994) and preliminary X-ray analysis of the apple ACS crystal structure (Hohenester *et al.*, 1994) suggest that ACS is dimeric in nature. ACS from tomato and apple have been observed to be dimeric, in the crystal structure (Capitani *et al.*, 1999; Huai *et al.*, 2001), and by mutant complementation studies for tomato ACS (Tarun *et al.*, 1998; Tarun and Theologis, 1998), where the sharing of an active site by two monomers within a dimeric unit was observed. Consistent with other PLP-dependent aminotransferases the catalytic mechanism of LE-ACS2 involves two intermediate aldimine linkages, of PLP and SAM, with lysine at position 278 (K\(^{278}\)) other essential amino acids (P\(^{26}\), Y\(^{27}\), F\(^{28}\), A\(^{54}\), Y\(^{152}\), P\(^{153}\), R\(^{157}\), Y\(^{240}\), K\(^{278}\) and R\(^{412}\)), and then substrate conversion followed by transaldimination to release the product (Huai *et al.*, 2001). In a previous study, the active site of ACS had been identified in apple and tomato fruits by radioactive labelling of SAM and PLP (Yip *et al.*, 1990), in which it was found that the lysine residue that binds PLP via an aldimine linkage was also alkylated with vinylglycine leading to irreversible inactivation of the enzyme.

ACS has a high affinity for SAM, with apparent \(K_m^{\text{SAM}}\) values ranging from 12 \(\mu\)M for an apple ACS expressed in *E. coli* (White *et al.*, 1994) to 60 \(\mu\)M for a partially purified enzyme from zucchini fruit (Nakajima and Imaseki, 1986). The apparent \(K_m^{\text{SAM}}\) for the *Arabidopsis* isoforms ranges from 8.3 to 45 \(\mu\)M (Yamagami *et al.*, 2003), with the \(K_{cat}\) values varying from 0.19 to 4.82 s\(^{-1}\) per monomer. ACSs have pH optimum in the alkaline region, with an optimum of pH 8.0 for an enzyme partially purified from mung bean fruit (Tsai *et al.*, 1988; 1991), pH 9.5 for an enzyme from zucchini fruit (Sato *et al.*, 1991) and pH values ranging between 7.3 and 8.2 for all of the *Arabidopsis* isozymes (Yamagami *et al.*, 2003). Both the length and primary sequence of the C-terminal region of various ACS are hypervariable (Theologis, 1992), which has been found to affect its enzymatic function as well as dimerisation (Fluur and Mattoo, 1996). Therefore, despite a high degree of similarity in the rest of the protein (Theologis, 1992), the overall amino acid sequence identities of ACS vary widely from 48 % to 97 % (Spanu *et al.*, 1994). ACS is generally considered to be the major rate-limiting enzyme in the ethylene biosynthetic pathway. This is due to the low abundance of the enzyme, \(< 0.0001 \%\) of total soluble protein in the pericarp of ripening tomato fruit; (Bleecker, 1986), and \(~1.5 \text{ ng of LE-ACS6 in every 100 \(\mu\)g of total protein extract; (Liu and Zhang, 2004)}\), to the rapid induction, instability of the enzyme (Bleecker *et al.*, 1988), and because the rate of ethylene production appears to correlate well with the enzymatic activity (Rottman *et al.*, 1991; Kende, 1993; Yang and Dong, 1993). The half life (t\(_1/2\)) of ACS, as determined by the rapid decay of enzyme activity after treatment of tissues with cycloheximide, varied from 58 min in wounded tomato fruit (Kim and Yang, 1992), 25 min in mung bean hypocotyls (Yoshii and Imaseki, 1982) to 20 min in tomato leaves (Spanu *et al.*, 1990).
It is well established that protein phosphorylation and dephosphorylation are important regulators of enzymatic activity. As ACS is a major control point in the regulation of ethylene biosynthesis, studies are underway to unravel the post-translational modifications responsible for the rapid induction and the rapid inhibition of ACS. For example, in general the basal level activity of ACS is very low in tissues that do not produce a significant amount of ethylene, and stress induced ethylene production is associated with a rapid increase in cellular ACS activity. Recently, Liu and Zhang, (2004) have demonstrated that the mitogen activated protein kinase (MAPK; designated MPK6) is induced by stress to phosphorylate Arabidopsis AT-ACS2 and AT-ACS6 at conserved serine residues (S\(^{480}\), S\(^{483}\) and S\(^{488}\)) of the carboxyl terminus. Evidence that MPK6 is required for the induction of AT-ACS2 and AT-ACS6 is also provided by genetic studies (Liu and Zhang, 2004). As the levels of phosphorylation were proportional to the number of phosphorylation sites, this linearity shows that each phosphorylation site is independent of the other phosphorylation sites. Given that the stability of these proteins is positively correlated with the amount of phosphorylation, and evidence from preliminary studies using proteasome inhibitors indicates that the ubiquitin-proteasome pathway is involved in the degradation of AT-ACS6, it is likely that phosphorylation prevents or slows down this process. As a consequence of phosphorylation of AT-ACS2 and AT-ASC6 by MPK6, these proteins accumulate leading to increased activity and ethylene production. Interestingly, AT-ASC2 and AT-ASC6 have been observed to act synergistically. This stress-induced activation of MPK6 has been observed to occur within one to several minutes, which represents one of the earliest responses in plants under stress (Liu and Zhang, 2004). Also, kinetic analysis for phosphorylated AT-ACS6 displays a similar \(V_{\text{max}}\) (390 \(\mu\text{mol h}^{-1} \text{mg}^{-1}\)) and \(K_m\) (49 \(\mu\text{M}\)) for its substrate SAM to the unphosphorylated AT-ACS6 (\(V_{\text{max}}\) 332 \(\mu\text{mol h}^{-1} \text{mg}^{-1}\), \(K_m\) 42 \(\mu\text{M}\)) suggesting that phosphorylation of AT-ACS6 by MPK6 does not alter the enzymatic activity of AT-ACS6 (Liu and Zhang et al., 2004). Since AT-ACS2 and more importantly AT-ACS6 have been identified as the substrates for MPK6, this links the MAPK cascade directly to the induction of ethylene biosynthesis in plants under stress.

Tomato LE-ACS2 from pericarp tissue has been shown to be phosphorylated by an unidentified wound induced calcium-dependent protein kinase (CDPK) at S\(^{460}\) (Tatsuki and Mori, 2001), which is conserved in the C-terminus of many ACS isozymes (Yamagami et al., 2003), including AT-ACS2 and AT-ACS6. This indicates that AT-ACS2 and AT-ACS6 may be regulated by two different kinase pathways. Further, the observation that wounding induces a long-lasting ethylene induction in tomato pericarp tissue but only a transient induction of ethylene in leaf tissue has suggested the presence of tissue-specific pathways (Tatsuki and Mori, 1999), and/or maybe the induction of different LE-ACS isoforms. Also, pulse-chase experiments with phosphatase/kinase inhibitors have shown that the \(t/2\) of phosphorylated LE-
ACS2 was longer than the non-phosphorylated form (Mori et al., 2006), which supports the hypothesis that phosphorylation of ACS explains the rapid increase in ethylene production in response to wounding, and for the burst of ethylene produced during climacteric fruit ripening (Tatsuki and Mori, 2001).

The regulation of ACS is further highlighted with the ongoing characterization of the function of the ETO1 protein of Arabidopsis. For example, over expression of ETO1 inhibits the induction of ethylene production (Vogel et al., 1998) and promotes AT-ACS5 degradation (Chae et al., 2003; Wang et al., 2004). Conversely, the eto mutants of Arabidopsis overproduce ethylene and display the triple response (Wang et al., 2004) whilst enhancing the stability of AT-ACS5 and AT-ACS9 (Yamagami et al., 2003). The C-terminal end AT-ACS5 has been observed to target the protein for rapid proteolysis by the 26S proteosome (Chae et al., 2006), and this rapid degradation requires the ETO1 protein, which acts as a substrate-specific adaptor protein to promote ubiquitination of AT-ACS5. ETO1 has been shown not to interact with AT-ACS6 and AT-ACS2 (pers comm. Wang and Ecker, cited in Ecker, 2004). It should be noted that AT-ACS1 is enzymatically inactive and AT-ACS3 is a pseudogene, AT-ACS10 and AT-ACS12 encode aminotransferases, leaving eight authentic AT-ACS genes (Yamagami et al., 2003). It remains to be determined whether AT-ACS7 is also post-transcriptionally regulated because the regulatory C-domain is missing (Yamagami et al., 2003).

The gene encoding ACS was first cloned from zucchini (Sato and Theologis, 1989), and many have been cloned since (see review by Grichko and Glick, 2001) and are developmentally regulated or differentially expressed in response to various internal and external inducers (Lanahan et al., 1994; Theologis, 1992; Yi et al., 1999; Bekman et al., 2000). For example, in Arabidopsis thirteen ACS genes have been isolated (Schaller and Kieber, 2002) and show both distinct and overlapping patterns of expression (Tsuchisaka and Theologis, 2004b). In seedlings of Arabidopsis, it was shown very early that each ACS family gene had a specific response to wounding, anaerobiosis, and treatment with lithium chloride and auxin (Liang et al., 1992). Further, in leaf development of Arabidopsis, AT-ACS1 expression is highest at leaf emergence and decreases sharply in rapidly expanding leaves (Smalle et al., 1999), while AT-ACS6 expression is induced in senescent leaves during ozone exposure (Miller et al., 1999). At least eight LE-ACS genes have been isolated (Van Der Straeten et al., 1990; Rottman et al., 1991; Johnson and Ecker, 1998; Alexander and Grierson, 2002). In apple MD-ACS1, there is allelic variation in the level of transcript during fruit ripening (Sunako et al., 1999).
1.3.3 Conjugation of ACC

ACC is not only converted to ethylene in plants, but can also be conjugated with malonyl in a malonyl CoA-dependent reaction into N-malonylamino-1-cyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid (N-malonyl-ACC / MACC), a reaction catalysed by N-malonyltransferase (Amrhein et al., 1981; Hoffman et al., 1982; 1983; Peiser and Yang, 1998). Alternatively, ACC can be conjugated to glutamic acid in a glutathione-dependent reaction to form 1-(gamma-L-glutamylamino) ACC (GACC) catalysed by glutamyl ACC transferase (Martin et al., 1995; Peiser and Yang, 1998). Although ACC is known to be metabolized to a-ketobutyrate and ammonia in some microorganisms (Honma and Shimomura, 1978), there is no evidence of such a deamination reaction in plant tissue (Amrhein et al., 1981). The amount of ACC in higher plants therefore must be regulated by at least four enzymes, ACS, ACO, N-malonyltransferase and glutamyl ACC transferase (Figure 1.1).

MACC is found throughout the plant, including vegetative tissue, seeds and in ripening fruit (Satoh and Esashi, 1984; Yang and Dong, 1993; Peiser and Yang, 1998; Lara and Vendrell, 2000; Tan and Bangerth, 2000). N-malonyltransferase has been partially purified from mung bean (Guo et al., 1992; Benichou et al., 1995) and tomato (Martin and Saftner, 1995). Two isoforms have been identified in mung bean that have different molecular masses (35 and 55 kDa) and kinetic parameters (Benichou et al., 1995). MACC has been thought to be a stable conjugate in germinating peanut seeds and wheat leaves, unable to be hydrolyzed to release free ACC in vivo (Hoffman et al., 1983) and studies with Acer pseudoplatanus cells indicated that MACC is synthesized in the cytosol and stored in the vacuole (Bouzayen et al., 1988).

However, the observation in cotton cotyledonary tissue of fluctuations in MACC suggested that MACC is metabolized (Jasoni et al., 2002), possibly to ACC or transported to another location. This observation concurs with earlier studies which demonstrated that when radioactive MACC was applied to tobacco and watercress, radioactive ACC and ethylene were formed (Jiao et al., 1986). Also, N-malonyltransferase activity has been shown to have developmental and tissue-specific patterns of expression in tomato (Martin and Saftner, 1995; Peiser and Yang, 1998), and MACC accumulates differentially in the pulp and peel during apple fruit development (Lara and Vendrell, 2000; Tan and Bangerth, 2000), although MACC levels increased and remained high during the apple climacteric.

Conjugation of ACC into GACC using in vivo feeding of radiolabelled ACC to tomato tissue discs, was found in mature-green fruit in amounts about 10 % of that of MACC, but was not detected in fruits at other ripening stages, although GACC was formed in vitro in extracts from fruit of all ripening stages (Peiser and Yang, 1998). In contrast, Martin et al. (1995) found
GACC in both preclimacteric and climacteric tomato fruit, using protein extracts in assays initiated with radiolabelled ACC, and report higher levels of GACC than the amounts found for MACC. Peiser and Yang (1998) did not support the proposal that GACC formation could be more important than MACC formation in tomato fruit, and concluded that MACC is the major, if not the sole, conjugate of ACC in plant tissues. Interestingly, glutathione is a tripeptide synthesized from cysteine, glycine and glutamic acid, and is involved in scavenging hydrogen peroxide and other reactive oxygen species, as well as serving as an amino acid transporter.

1.4 ACC Oxidase (ACO)

1.4.1 The Ethylene-Forming Enzyme (EFE)

Identification of the ethylene forming enzyme (EFE) has lagged behind ACC synthase because although ethylene could be produced by the administration of ACC to a wide variety of plant tissue in vivo (Cameron et al., 1979), the ability to produce ethylene was not retained in vitro, following homogenisation and the administration of ACC. Many enzymes were assessed as the ethylene forming enzymes, including peroxidase, an IAA-oxidase, a carnation microsomal enzyme, a pea microsomal enzyme and an enzyme from a pea seedling, but ethylene production in vivo did not correspond to the ethylene production in vitro (Yang and Hoffman, 1984). For example, the reported $K_m$ for ACC ($K_m^{ACC}$) for the pea microsomal enzyme in a cell-free homogenate ranged between 15 mM to 400 mM, values that were much higher than the $K_m^{ACC}$ of 66 $\mu$M reported for the enzyme in vivo from pea epicotyls (McKeon and Yang, 1984).

As the ACC molecule possesses reflective symmetry but lacks geometric (rotational) symmetry, the two methylene groups of ACC could be distinguished by an enzyme which stereodifferentiates. Ethyl substitution of each of the four methylene hydrogens of ACC results in four stereoisomers of 1-amino-2-ethyl-cyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid (AEC), whose absolute configurations are (1R, 2R), (1S, 2S), (1R, 2S), and (1S, 2R). Therefore, when each of the four stereoisomers of AEC was administered to post climacteric apple and (1R, 2S)-AEC was preferentially converted to 1-butene (Hoffman et al., 1982), this observation demonstrated that the enzyme converting ACC to ethylene exhibited stereospecificity towards the 2-ethyl-ACC stereoisomer (1R, 2S)-AEC in vivo, and could also be used to validate the authenticity of EFE activity in vitro. This is important as ACC can be converted to ethylene non-enzymatically by oxidants (Boller et al. 1979; Lizada and Yang, 1979) including oxidative free radicals (Legge et al., 1982), such as in the Fenton reaction (Fe$^{2+}$ and H$_2$O$_2$) and in the presence of xanthine and xanthine oxidase (McRae et al., 1983). In some plant tissues under light, in the presence of Cu$^{2+}$, non physiological evolution of ethylene may be derived from lipid peroxidation (Sandmann and Boger, 1980).
Slater et al. (1985) first identified the ethylene forming enzyme (EFE) as the translation product of an mRNA isolated from tomato fruits. They identified nineteen non-homologous groups of tomato ripening-related clones. One of these clones, designated pTOM13 (now LE-ACO1) was shown to be homologous to an mRNA, which accumulated prior to the wounding-induced ethylene peak in unripe fruit and leaf tissue of tomato (Smith et al., 1986). Subsequently, pTOM13 was shown to be induced by ethylene in mature green tomato fruit (Maunders et al., 1987). Following the observation of greatly reduced ethylene production by tomato plants transformed with pTOM13 in the antisense orientation, Hamilton et al. (1990) suggested that the gene encoded an enzyme involved in ethylene biosynthesis. It appeared that from a comparison of the molecular mass of partially purified ACC synthase from zucchini fruit (53 kDa; Sato et al., 1991) with the translation product of pTOM13 (35 kDa; Smith et al., 1986), the coded protein was too small to be an ACC synthase (Hamilton et al., 1990). To further confirm whether pTOM13 could encode EFE, an activity assay in vivo was performed on leaf discs from both wild type and plants transformed with pTOM13 in the antisense orientation, and it was shown that the ethylene forming ability was reduced in the antisense plants in a gene dosage-dependent manner (Hamilton et al., 1990). In addition, Hamilton et al. (1991) then reported that a full-length clone of pTOM13 (designated pRC13) was found to confer EFE activity when the cDNA was expressed heterologously in yeast.

The deduced amino acid sequence of pTOM13 was found to have 33% identity and 58% similarity with flavonone 3-hydroxylase from Antirrhinum majus which is a member of the 2-oxoglutarate-dependent dioxygenases (2-ODDs) (Prescott, 1993; Prescott and John, 1996; Iturriaga-Goyoita-Bueno et al., 1996). This enzyme is known to be a non-haem iron-containing protein requiring anaerobic conditions during extraction and Fe$^{2+}$ and a reducing agent (ascorbate) for maximal activity in vitro (Britsch and Grisebach, 1986). By incorporating these components into the reaction mixture in vitro, Ververidis and John (1991) were the first to demonstrate authentic EFE activity in vitro from the soluble fraction of melon fruit, and the failure of previous attempts to assay enzymatic activity was now attributed to the loss of these cofactors during protein extraction from plant tissue.

Confirmation for both EFE activities in vitro and in vivo was achieved by finding a parallel increase in preclimacteric apple fruits treated with ethylene (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992), and by the stereospecificity of the reaction (Ververidis and John, 1991; Kuai and Dilley, 1992; Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Dong et al., 1992b). The stoichiometry of the EFE reaction in vitro was then determined (Dong et al., 1992b) and as a consequence of this, EFE was renamed 1-aminocyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid (ACC) oxidase (ACO) (EC.1.4.3), and is now classed as a 2-oxoacid dependent dioxygenase (2-ODD)(Prescott and John, 1996).
Figure 1.2: The Stoichiometry of the Reaction Catalyzed by ACC Oxidase

In this reaction ACC oxidase catalyses the oxidation of ACC and ascorbate in the presence of dioxygen to ethylene, carbon dioxide, cyanide, dehydroascorbate and water. AH$_2$ and A stand for ascorbate and dehydroascorbate, respectively. Ferrous iron and carbon dioxide are cofactors.

Once ACC oxidase (ACO) activity, in vitro, was fully recovered from crude protein extracts using appropriate cofactors (ascorbate and Fe$^{2+}$), purification and characterization of the enzyme from many plant species progressed quickly. For example, in pear (Vioque and Castellano, 1994; 1998; Fonseca et al., 2004), avocado (McGarvey and Christofferson, 1992), banana (Moya-Leon and John, 1995), breadfruit (Williams and Golden, 2002), tomato (Smith et al., 1994; Zhang et al., 1995; Barlow et al., 1997) and kiwifruit (Xu et al., 1998). Partially purified and crude enzyme extract from carnation flowers (Nijenhuis-De Vries et al., 1994; Kosugi et al., 1997). Kinetic analyses of ACO activity demonstrate that the enzyme exists as more than one isoform in Trifolium repens (Gong and McManus, 2000) and in tomato (Bidonde et al., 1998). (for the Purification, Characterization and kinetic properties of ACO in apple, refer section 1.6.1.2)

1.4.2 Catalytic Mechanism of ACC Oxidase

Most 2-oxoglutarate-dependent dioxygenases (ODDs) have an absolute requirement for 2-oxoglutarate as a co-substrate, and a reductant (Prescott and John, 1996), whereas ACO is not stimulated by 2-oxoglutarate and is inhibited in vitro by the molecule (Dupille and Zacarias, 1996; Iturriagagoitia-Bueno et al., 1996; Vioque and Castellano, 1998) at concentrations of ~1mM (Vioque and Castellano, 1998). The suggestion that ACO originated by an alteration in substrate specificity from 2-oxoglutarate to ACC (John, 1997) is in keeping with these inhibition studies. Another atypical ODD is isopenicillin N synthase (IPNS) which also does not use 2-oxoglutarate, and has been extensively used as a model to predict the secondary structure and to elucidate the catalytic mechanism of ACO (Shaw et al., 1996; Kadyrzhanova et al., 1997; 1999; Dilley et al., 2004; Seo et al., 2004; Iturriagagoitia-Bueno et al., 1996; Lay et al., 1996; Zhang et al., 1997) as the crystal structure was available (Roach et al., 1995) prior to the solving of the crystal structure of ACO from Petunia hybrida (Zhang et al., 2004b).
Ferrous iron (Fe$^{2+}$) is now confirmed to be an essential co-factor for ACO (Bouzayen et al., 1991), and the observation that neither 2-methyl-1,2-dipyridyl-1-propane nor phenylhydrazine inhibit the activity of ACO (purified from apple) demonstrated that ACO is not a haem iron protein, but a non-haem iron(II) dependent protein (a dioxygenase) (Dupille et al., 1993). At the active site of avocado recombinant ACO expressed in E. coli, Fe$^{2+}$ is oxidized to ferric iron (Fe$^{3+}$) during a single turnover reaction (Rocklin et al., 2004), determined using electron paramagnetic resonance (EPR) spectroscopy. In a nice study, the inactivation of recombinant LE-ACO (pTOM13 expressed in E. coli), by diethylpyrocarbonate (DEPC) provided evidence that two or three His residues were rapidly N-carboxyethylated (Zhang et al., 1995), and although tomato (LE-ACO1) contains approximately nine His residues, the modifications are most likely to occur at the active site. Further, when Fe$^{2+}$ together with ACC, ascorbate and DEPC were added to the reaction mixture, the enzyme activity was protected by 60 to 80 %, while in the absence of Fe$^{2+}$ the enzyme activity was observed to decrease to 20 % (Zhang et al., 1995), which indicates that Fe$^{2+}$ is binding to at least one His residue at the active site of ACO. Spectroscopic studies using the electron nuclear double resonance (ENDOR) technique, identified two His residues in the Fe$^{2+}$ coordination sphere of avocado ACO expressed in E. coli (Tierney et al., 2005).

There is now convincing evidence from site-directed mutagenesis studies on the iron binding site of apple ACO expressed in E. coli (Shaw et al., 1996; Kadyrzhanova et al., 1997; 1999) and from mutagenesis and metal-catalyzed oxidation of tomato ACO expressed in E. coli (Zhang et al., 1997; Tayeh et al., 1999) that H$^{177}$, D$^{179}$ and H$^{234}$ bind Fe$^{2+}$ during catalytic activity. Other conserved residues (H$^{39}$, H$^{56}$, H$^{94}$ and H$^{211}$) are important for catalytic activity (Zhang et al., 1997; Tayeh et al., 1999; Zhang et al., 2004b), but have not been consigned roles. Analysis of the recently resolved crystal structure of ACO confirm that the active site contains a single Fe$^{2+}$ ligated by three residues H$^{177}$, D$^{179}$ and H$^{234}$ (Zhang et al., 2004b), which have equivalent residues in IPNS and other ODDs (Kadyrzhonova et al., 1997; 1999; Rocklin et al., 2001). This “2-His-1-carboxylate facial triad” which holds the Fe$^{2+}$ centre in the active site, thereby leaves three sites available for exogenous ligand binding (Rocklin et al., 1999; Zhou et al., 2001).

An iron catalytic centre is extremely versatile as it can dynamically coordinate multiple exogenous ligands and promote interactions between them. With such a wide range of possible interactions, together with the multiple transition states involved in converting O$_2$ and ACC to ethylene, CO$_2$ and HCN, the mechanism of the two-electron oxidation of ACC to ethylene remains largely unclear, and investigations using site-directed mutagenesis, spectroscopy and crystallography are often difficult to interpret. For example, although ACO requires the
Introduction

presence of ascorbate and CO2/HCO3−, the roles played by these reagents, the order of substrate addition, and the mechanism of oxygen activation remain controversial. The proposed mechanism that both ascorbate and O2 bind to the Fe2+ which initiates the O2 activation process (Zhang et al., 1997; Pirrung et al., 1998) differ from the more recent proposals of Rocklin et al. (1999), Zhou et al. (2001) and Tierney et al. (2005) that ACC and O2 bind Fe2+ simultaneously thereby allowing the correct orientation to promote electron transfer between them and initiate catalysis. The two-electron oxidation of ACC requires Fe2+, O2, ascorbate and CO2 in vitro (Veriveridis and John, 1991; Dong et al., 1992; Peiser et al., 1984; Adams and Yang, 1979), and seems to proceed via two successive one-electron transfer processes (Pirrung et al., 1998). Spectroscopic and crystallographic studies have revealed that the mechanisms of ACO, like other 2-ODDs (IPNS, Roach et al., 1995; deacetoxycephalosporin C synthase, DAOCS; Valegård et al., 1998, and anthocyanidin synthase, ANS, Wilmouth et al., 2002), involve binding of dioxygen to a five-coordinate Fe2+ in the enzyme-substrate complex (Costas et al., 2004; Rocklin et al., 1999; Zhou et al., 2002; Zhang et al., 2004b).

Spectroscopic evidence that both the α-amino and α-carboxylate groups of ACC bind directly to iron complexed to ACO (from avocado expressed in E. coli) was provided by Rocklin et al. (1999), as studied with a readily formed ACO.Fe2+.NO.ACC ternary complex which does not undergo reaction turnover (NO is alanine, the structural analog of ACC, labelled with 15N and 17O). However, mutagenesis studies using apple ACO expressed in E. coli concluded that R244, S246 and T157 are binding sites for the ACC carboxyl group (Kadyrzhanova et al., 1999; Dilley et al., 2003), based on steady-state kinetics of the mutants R244K, S246A and T157A as single double and triple mutants of the three residues. The Km for ACC (Km ACC) of the triple mutant was increased while the V max was decreased. This is consistent with the ACC carboxyl group interacting with the R244 guanidinium group and the hydroxyl group of S246 and T157. In the crystal structure of petunia ACO, although R244 is directed away from the active site, a conformational change could bring the side chain into the active site, and perhaps indirectly bind to Fe2+ via a water molecule (Zhang et al., 2004b), and could bind HCO3−. Interestingly, R244 and S246 form the tripeptide motif (RXS; X denotes any residue) which is a typical phosphorylation site. A further proposal from spectroscopic analysis of recombinant avocado ACO is that R244 and R175 do bind NaHCO3, which in turn binds an iron bound O2 derived intermediate to enable correct proton and electron transfer (Rocklin et al., 1999). Chemical modification has shown that apple recombinant ACO does not catalyze by the hydroxylation of the amino terminal of ACC (Charng et al., 2001). Of the three conserved cysteine residues observed (C28, C133 and C165) only the C28 residue is important for catalysis in apple ACO (Kadyrzhanova et al., 1997; 1999).
Covalent modification studies using apple ACO expressed in *E. coli* implicate the lysine residues K\(^{158}\), K\(^{230}\) or K\(^{292}\) as the most critical for ascorbate activation (Kadyrzhanova *et al*., 1999; Dilley *et al*., 2003). This observation is based on pyridoxal-5-phosphate (PLP), which is a potent inhibitor of ACO and can readily form Schiff bases with lysine, competing with ascorbic acid for lysine binding sites. Ascorbic acid binds to proteins via salt bridges and H-bonding (Li *et al*., 2001), but may form a Schiff base with lysine. Of note is that K\(^{158}\) is adjacent to T\(^{157}\), the residue proposed to bind the carboxyl group of ACC. Also, in kiwi fruit ACO expressed in *E. coli*, the mutation of K\(^{158}\) (to A\(^{158}\) and C\(^{158}\)) resulted in almost complete loss of enzyme activity (Lay *et al*., 1996). Analysis of the crystal structure of petunia ACO suggests that K\(^{158}\) should be accessible for Schiff base formation with pyridoxal (Zhang *et al*., 2004b). However, in petunia ACO and other 2-ODDs, a well-defined binding site for ascorbate has not been identified, although electron transfer from ascorbate may be mediated via Y\(^{289}\) in the active site of petunia ACO (Zhang *et al*., 2004b). Mutagenesis studies using recombinant MD-ACO1 from apple suggest the ascorbate interacts with the side chains of R\(^{244}\) and S\(^{346}\) (Seo *et al*., 2004). Also as crystallographic evidence suggests that ascorbate does not bind directly to ascorbate peroxidase (Sharp *et al*., 2003), it may be that ascorbate does not chelate to the non-haem iron of ACO either. *In vitro*, catalytic oxidation of ACC can be coupled to the oxidation of ascorbate (Dong *et al*., 1992b; Smith *et al*., 1992; Vioque and Castellano, 1994) although the *in vivo* stoichiometry of the ACO reaction is uncertain. In addition to the proposed role of ascorbate as a reducing agent to complete the reaction turnover (Dilley *et al*., 2003; Rocklin *et al*., 2004), possibly at two separate points in catalysis (Rocklin *et al*., 2004), spectroscopic evidence has been provided by Zhou *et al*., (2001), Rocklin *et al*., (2004) and Tierney *et al*., (2005) that ascorbate has an effector role, which may involve binding at a secondary site far from the active site and causing a conformational change in ACO.

In apple recombinant ACO, the proposal that HCO\(_3^-\) (not CO\(_2\)) binds directly to R\(^{175}\) and thus positions Fe\(^{2+}\) into its binding site (H\(^{177}\), D\(^{179}\) and H\(^{314}\)) has been made by Dilley *et al*., (2003). Although in the crystal structure of petunia ACO R\(^{175}\) is on a loop directed away from the active site, a conformational change could bring the side chain into the Fe\(^{2+}\) binding site (Zhang *et al*., 2004b). Mutants of E\(^{175}\), Q\(^{175}\), H\(^{175}\), A\(^{175}\) and G\(^{175}\) were unable to interact with HCO\(_3^-\), whereas the addition of carbonic anhydrase stimulated the activity of the wild type R\(^{175}\). As for the proposed role of CO\(_2\) (Zhou *et al*., 2001), the presence of HCO\(_3^-\) may allow the continuous turnover of the reaction and prevent the inactivation of ACO (Dilley *et al*., 2003). The addition of NaHCO\(_3\) (as CO\(_2\)) to ACO incubations has been observed to both increase K\(_{cat}\) and protect ACO from oxidative deactivation (Rocklin *et al*., 2004; Zhang *et al*., 2004b). Activity *in vitro* of purified ACO from apple fruit is completely abolished in a CO\(_2\)-free atmosphere, but can be reversed (Dong *et al*., 1992b). ACO is unusual in that it requires NaHCO\(_3\) *in vitro* as an
activator (Dong et al., 1992b; McRae et al., 1983; Smith and John, 1993), although CO$_2$ itself and (not HCO$_3^-$) has been identified as the active species for ACO purified to near homogeneity (Fernández-Maculet et al., 1993) and partially purified (Poneleit and Dilley, 1993) from apple fruit tissue.

The mechanism by which carbon dioxide activates apple recombinant ACO has been examined by site-directed mutagenesis (Kadyrzhanova et al., 1997; 1999; Chamg et al., 1997). The mechanism was proposed to be similar to the CO$_2$ activation of RUBISCO which is through the formation of carbamate at a lysine residue. Of eight completely conserved lysine residues (K$^{72}$, K$^{144}$, K$^{158}$, K$^{172}$, K$^{199}$, K$^{230}$, K$^{292}$ and K$^{296}$) all mutant forms were activated by CO$_2$ indicating that none of these lysine residues were the carbamyl ation target for CO$_2$ activation. For kiwi ACO, Lay et al. (1996) suggests that the carbamate is formed at R$^{300}$. For apple ACO, residues in the C-terminus E$^{297}$, R$^{299}$ and E$^{301}$ are important for enzyme activity particularly R$^{299}$ which may be involved in the mechanism of CO$_2$ activation (Kadyrzhanova et al., 1999). Further, both K$^{296}$ and R$^{296}$ have been suggested to play important roles in enzyme activity due to their positive charges (Yoo et al., 2006). The ACO motif K$^{296}$ to E$^{301}$ is conserved over 24 species, including apple (Yoo et al., 2006). Interestingly, truncation of the tomato pTOM13 ACO C-terminus after M$^{304}$ generated mutants with <5 % the activity of wild type, and truncation from E$^{302}$ led to almost complete (<1 %) loss of activity, although activity was stimulated by bicarbonate (pers. comm. Zhang and Schofield, cited in Zhang et al., 2004b). Oddly, in the crystal structure of petunia, the C terminus of each ACO monomer interlocks with the C terminus of an adjacent molecule to form a tetramer. Both hydrophobic and electrostatic interactions appear to be involved at this interface involving the following residues E$^{222}$ to K$^{297}$, K$^{279}$ to M$^{304}$ via a water molecule; L$^{288}$ to F$^{294}$; F$^{294}$ to F$^{294}$; and R$^{300}$ to D$^{219}$ and Y$^{235}$ (Zhang et al., 2004b), but may be an artefact due to the constraints of the crystalline lattice, which only shows the dimeric and tetrameric forms of petunia ACO.

A three-dimensional structure of apple recombinant ACO was determined using mutagenesis and comparative modelling methods (Seo et al., 2004) and as for the crystal structure of petunia ACO (Zhang et al., 2004b), the main chain of ACO contains a distorted double-stranded β-helix (DSBH or jelly-roll) core. The active site is located at the end of the DSBH near to the C-terminus and is well defined as a wide cleft (Seo et al., 2004; Zhang et al., 2004b), which appears to be open compared to those for IPNS and other 2-ODDs. On the inner surface of the active site the residues are mostly hydrophobic and well conserved when compared with those of IPNS and other 2-ODDs. The DSBH is stabilized by hydrophobic interactions that involve residues including F$^{31}$, I$^{184}$, L$^{186}$, Q$^{188}$, F$^{187}$, L$^{195}$, L$^{197}$, V$^{206}$, V$^{214}$, V$^{215}$, V$^{236}$ and F$^{250}$. Also an extended helix is stabilized by residues L$^{68}$, A$^{79}$, M$^{84}$ and electrostatic interactions between R$^{84}$
and D\textsuperscript{85}, and Y\textsuperscript{57} and W\textsuperscript{86}. The stabilization of the secondary structure is important to allow the tertiary structure adjustments necessary for the correct orientation of the active site.

If the proposal that electrons are transferred from one avocado recombinant ACO monomer to another (Rocklin et al., 2004), the observation that a loop projects into the active site of another monomer in the crystal structure of petunia may be relevant (Zhang et al., 2004b), and the residues which may be important if intramolecular electron transfer involving a protein residue occurs, are Q\textsuperscript{78}, E\textsuperscript{80}, D\textsuperscript{83}, K\textsuperscript{158}, H\textsuperscript{177}, F\textsuperscript{250}, N\textsuperscript{252}, Y\textsuperscript{285}, Y\textsuperscript{289}.

ACO is unstable during catalysis (Smith et al., 1994; Pirrung et al., 1993; 1998; Iturriagagoitia-Bueno et al., 1996; Zhang et al., 1997; Barlow et al., 1997; Zhang et al., 2004b) and several mechanisms for the inactivation of ACO have been observed. 1) Partial unfolding of ACO occurs in the absence of substrates and co-factors with a consequent reduction of the t\textsubscript{1/2} of the enzyme, although the inactivation is relatively slow and does not involve the fragmentation of the protein. 2) Rapid inactivation of ACO occurs in the presence of Fe\textsuperscript{2+} and ascorbate. This inactivation is thought to be caused by oxidative damage due to the generation of hydrogen peroxide from the interaction of Fe\textsuperscript{2+} and ascorbate in aerobic conditions, as the inactivation does not occur in the presence of catalase (a catalase protectable inactivation). 3) ACO also undergoes metal-catalyzed autocleavage which is not catalase protectable. Two cleavage sites have been identified by N-terminal sequencing of ACO, one between L\textsuperscript{186} and F\textsuperscript{187} and the second between V\textsuperscript{214} and V\textsuperscript{215}. Analysis of the crystal structure indicates that these sites are on adjacent strands of the DSBH, which is consistent with ACO cleavage being mediated by leakage of a reactive oxygen species from the iron at the active site. This is also consistent with the observation that no ACO fragmentation occurs when the enzyme is denatured prior to the addition of ascorbate and Fe\textsuperscript{2+}. Additionally, non-haem iron oxygenases have been found to catalyze several types of post-translational modification reactions of their amino acid side chains (Ryle and Hausinger, 2002).

1.4.3 ACC Oxidase Gene Expression in Higher Plants

It is now well established that ACO belongs to a small multi-gene family in numerous plant species (e.g. Pogson et al., 1995; Lasserre et al., 1996; Barry et al., 1996; Kim et al., 1998; Hunter et al., 1999; Ruperti et al., 2001; Chen and McManus, 2006). Following identification of the first ACO cDNA in Lycopersicon esculentum (designated as pTOM13) (Slater et al., 1985; Hamilton et al., 1990; 1991; Bouzayen et al., 1993) many ACO gene families have now been identified through screening genomic libraries. ACO cDNA clones isolated from tomato were designated LE-ACO1, LE-ACO2, LE-ACO3 and LE-ACO4 (Bouzayen et al., 1993; Barry...
et al., 1996; Nakatsuka et al., 1998), with a sequence identity of 88-94% between LE-ACO1, LE-ACO2 and LE-ACO3 (Lasserre et al., 1996), and a fifth putative LE-ACO5 (Sell and Hahl, 2005). LE-ACO1 shares a high sequence identity with apple ACO (AP4-ACO: 74%) and with the predicted peptide sequence an identity of 88% (Holdsworth et al., 1987). In peach, two distinct ACO genes share a coding sequence identity of 77.7% (Ruperti et al., 2001). PP-ACO1 is organized as 4 exons interrupted by 3 introns, whereas PP-ACO2 has only 2 of the 3 introns present in PP-ACO1, and lacks the second intron. The introns and 5’ and 3’ untranslated regions of PP-ACO1 and PP-ACO2 show degrees of homology ranging between 44% and 50.4%. PP-ACO1 and PP-ACO2 have the highest sequence identity with apple ACO (AP4-ACO: 85.4%) and petunia (PH-ACO3: 84.1%) (Ruperti et al., 2001). In the melon family CM-ACO1 has a coding region interrupted by three introns, but the other two genes (CM-ACO2 and CM-ACO3) have only two introns (Lasserre et al., 1996). Similarly, in the petunia family, PH-ACO1 has four exons while PH-ACO2, PH-ACO3 and PH-ACO4 have three exons (Tang et al., 1993). An ACO from avocado (pAVoe3) shares a high sequence identity with apple ACO (AP4-ACO: 72%) and with the predicted peptide sequence an identity of 84% (McGarvey et al., 1990). Using cDNA screening, three members in sunflower seedlings (Liu et al., 1997), two in banana fruit (Huang et al., 1997, Huang and Do, 1998), two in potato (Nie et al., 2002; Zanetti et al., 2002), three in tobacco (Kim et al., 1998), one in apricot (Mbéguié-A-Mbéguié et al., 1999) and one in pear (Gao et al., 2002) have been identified. Sequence comparison from more than thirty ACO genes indicated a high nucleotide sequence identity (70-80%) both within the same family and between families from different plant species (Lasserre et al., 1996).

Many ACOs are differentially expressed during plant development (Barry et al., 1996; Lasserre et al., 1996; Blume and Grierson, 1997; Hunter et al., 1999; Rasori et al., 2003; Chen and McManus, 2006) and in response to environmental stimuli (Dong et al., 1992; Ross et al., 1992; Balague et al., 1993; Fluhr and Mattoo, 1996; Nakajima et al., 2001; Moeder et al., 2002), including Petunia hybrida PH-ACOs (Tang et al., 1993) and mung bean ACOs (Kim and Yang, 1994). In broccoli for example, ACC-Ox1 is expressed in senescent and reproductive tissues and ACC-Ox2 is only expressed in reproductive tissues (Pogson et al., 1995).

In tomato, the expression of LE-ACO1, LE-ACO2, LE-ACO3 and LE-ACO4 was examined using a combination of northern analysis and ribonuclease protection assays (Barry et al., 1996; Nakatsuku et al., 1998). LE-ACO1 was barely detectable in green leaves but rapidly increased at the onset of senescence (27-fold) and continued to rise, LE-ACO2 was not detected in leaf tissue, and LE-ACO3 was present in green leaf tissue, and transiently at the onset of senescence to a level approximately half that of the LE-ACO1 message. Similarly, in fruit LE-ACO1 increased rapidly from basal levels at the onset of the climacteric and remained high, LE-ACO2
was not detected in fruit (but is present in flower tissue) and LE-ACO3 appeared transiently at
the onset of senescence to a level approximately 13-fold less than LE-ACO1. LE-ACO4
increased from basal levels at the onset of the climacteric and persisted through ripening, but to
a much lower level than LE-ACO1. LE-ACO5, has recently been observed to be expressed in
response to anaerobiosis mainly in the fruits but also in the leaves (Sell and Hahl, 2005).
Expression was also examined with the β-glucuronidase (GUS) reporter gene fused to the
promoter region of LE-ACO1 and transformed into tomato (Blume and Grierson, 1997). The
LE-ACO1 promoter was induced in a similar way to that of the endogenous LE-ACO1 gene,
with major increases during leaf senescence and fruit ripening, but LE-ACO1 expression was
lower in ripening fruit relative to the amount induced during leaf senescence, in contrast to
endogenous mRNA which is more abundant in ripening fruit. It is suggested that the known
high stability of the GUS protein may contribute to the differences between the endogenous LE-
ACO activity when compared with the LE-ACO1-GUS activity (Blume and Grierson, 1997).
LE-ACO1 is induced by ethylene, methyl jasmonate, powdery mildew, wounding (Blume and
Grierson, 1997) and ozone (Nakajima et al., 2001; Moeder et al., 2002). LE-ACO1 (and
perhaps LE-ACO4) is clearly a senescence-associated-gene (SAG), while LE-ACO3 may be a
photosynthetic-associated-gene (PAG).

In peach (Prunus persica), northern analysis using total RNA with probes to the 3'-UTR were
used to examine the differential expression of PP-ACO1 and PP-ACO2. PP-ACO1 increased
dramatically during fruit ripening and leaf senescence (a senescence-associated gene; SAG),
and transcript was present in abscission zones, and flower and root tissues, as well as being
wound and ethylene inducible. PP-ACO2 transcript was detected only in peach fruitlets, roots
and hypocotyls (Ruperti et al., 2001). Expression was also examined with the GUS reporter
gene fused to the promoter region of PP-ACO1 and PP-ACO2 and transformed into tomato
(Rasori et al., 2003). The PP-ACO1 promoter induced in transgenic tomato plants corroborated
the expression pattern in peach, whereas the PP-ACO2 promoter induced expression in
immature and ripe fruit, senescent leaf and abscission zones. However, the suggestion that PP-
ACO2 may be more stable in the transgenic plant (Rasori et al., 2003) awaits further analysis.
Different lengths of the PP-ACO1 promoter region fused to the GUS reporter gene transformed
into tomato demonstrated the presence of tissue-specific regions (Moon and Callahan, 2004),
and investigations using 5'-deletion assays in combination with transient expression assays in
peach fruit tissue identified an ethylene responsive element (ERE) and two auxin-responsive
elements (Rasori et al., 2003).

In melon (Cucumis melo), the expression levels of CM-ACOs were monitored by RT-PCR
analysis using specific primers. Under these conditions CM-ACO1 is expressed predominantly
in ripe fruit, with detectable transcripts in leaves and etiolated hypocotyls, while wound and ethylene treatment induced significant amounts in the leaves. CM-ACO2 expression was limited to low levels in etiolated hypocotyls, and CM-ACO3 is expressed predominantly in flower tissue with very little in leaves and hypocotyls, and no expression in the fruit. When the PCRs were run for 30 cycles basal levels were detected for all three genes in all conditions (Lassere et al., 1996). Expression was examined with the GUS reporter gene fused to the promoter region of CM-ACO1 and CM-ACO3 and transformed into tobacco (Lassere et al., 1997). The CM-ACO1 gene promoter was induced by ethylene, wounding and copper sulphate treatment (2 ERE, and 7 WUN elements), while expression was low in young leaves then increased sharply at the onset of chlorophyll breakdown (a SAG, similar to LE-ACO1 in tomato leaves and PP-ACO1 in peach leaves). In contrast, the CM-ACO3 gene promoter was induced predominantly in young green leaves and then declined at the onset of senescence, while dense staining was also observed in all floral tissue.

White clover (Trifolium repens) ACO genes are expression differentially during leaf development (Hunter et al., 1999; Chen and McManus, 2006). For example, the expression of TR-ACO1 is predominantly in the apical tissues, TR-ACO2 expression is mainly in the green leaf tissue, with highest expression in newly initiated leaf tissues, and TR-ACO3 expression is initiated in newly senescent leaf tissues and increases with leaf yellowing (similar to the SAGs of tomato, peach and melon leaves), and then declines at leaf necrosis (Hunter et al., 1999). Studies using E. coli β-glucuronidase (GUS) fused to the 5'-UTR and upstream promoter regions of each of the TR-ACOs, and introduced into white clover, showed that the TR-ACO1 promoter directs highest expression in the apical tissues, axillary buds, and leaf petioles in younger tissues and then declines in the ageing tissues, while TR-ACO2 promoter drives expression in both younger, mature green and in ageing tissue. The TR-ACO3 and TR-ACO4 promoters also direct expression in the ontologically older tissues (SAGs), including axillary buds and leaf petioles (Chen and McManus, 2006). The wider distribution of the GUS TR-ACO2 fusion when compared with the endogenous TR-ACO2 may reflect the greater stability of the GUS enzyme.

Leaf senescence is a highly controlled and multifactorial sequence of events comprising the terminal developmental stage (Picton et al., 1993; Smart, 1994; John et al., 1995; Gan and Amasino, 1995; Oh et al., 1996; Buchanan-Wollaston, 1997; Buchanan-Wollaston et al., 2003; Grbić, 2003) at the onset of which many senescence associated genes (SAG) are upregulated, including ACO in many species. For example, in white clover TR-ACO3 expression increased rapidly at the onset of leaf senescence (Hunter et al., 1999; Chen and McManus, 2006), as did LE-ACO1 (Barry et al., 1996; Blume and Grierson, 1997; Nakatsaku et al.,
Introduction 26

19 98), PP-ACOI (Ruperti et al., 2001; Rasori et al., 2003) and CM-ACOI (Lasserre et al., 1996; 1997). In tobacco NG-ACOI and NG-ACO3 are also highly expressed in senescent leaves, while NG-ACO2 is constitutively expressed in all leaf tissue (Kim et al., 1998). In potato leaves, ST-ACOI is expressed predominantly in the senescent leaves, whereas ST-ACO2 is expressed in young and green leaves only (Nie et al., 2002). In papaya, CP-ACOI is induced before fruit maturity and CP-ACO2 is induced at a late state of fruit ripening and leaf senescence and is wound and ethylene inducible consistent with the WUN and ERE motifs (Chen et al., 2003). Some developmental processes such as fruit ripening and seed development may induce leaf senescence (Noodén and Guiamé, 1989), many genes are up-regulated during senescence (Huang et al., 2002) and rapid leaf senescence was observed when an Arabidopsis hexokinase was overexpressed in tomato (Dai et al., 1999) suggesting that high sugar levels may induce senescence (Sheen, 1990).

1.5 Circadian Regulation and Biological Clocks

Plant circadian rhythms in nature are always entrained to 24 h by the day / night cycle and the rhythms are all reset by light and / or temperature (Barak et al., 2000; Fankhauser and Staiger, 2002; Eriksson and Millar, 2003). The photoperiod sensor allows plants to respond to the annual cycle of day length by making flowers, tubers, or frost-tolerant buds at appropriate seasons (Imaizumi et al., 2003; Eriksson and Millar, 2003).

Three families of plant photoreceptors have now been identified; the phototropins, cryptochromes and phytochromes (Cashmore et al., 1999; Casal, 2000; Christie and Briggs, 2001). Upon light perception these photoreceptors initiate signalling cascades, which interact and integrate the signals generated by different photosensory pigments (Casal, 2000; Quail, 2002a; 2002b) and also serve as a resetting cue for the circadian clock (Devlin, 2002). Upon light perception, phytochromes translocate from the cytosol to the nucleus (Nagy and Schaefer, 2000; 2002) and have been found to influence light-responsive promoters by direct contact with transcription factors (Fankhauser and Staiger, 2002). The persistence of circadian rhythms even in the absence of environmental timing cues (Thain et al., 2004; Nováková et al., 2005) indicates that they are driven by a self-sustaining oscillator. Integral to the endogenous clock are proteins that oscillate with a 24 h rhythm, via rhythmically transcribed genes and feed back of the clock / oscillator proteins to inhibit transcriptional activity of their own genes after a certain delay (Carpenter et al., 1994; Alabadi et al., 2001; Young and Kay, 2001; Staiger, 2002; Carré and Kim, 2002; Staiger et al., 2003; Tenorio et al., 2003). Posttranscriptional regulation of the clock transcripts as well as posttranslational modifications of the clock proteins contribute to the maintenance of the 24 h periodicity (Nimmo, 1998; Edery, 1999; Allada et
Thus the phases of clock gene mRNA and clock protein oscillations, including the expression of photoreceptors, are indicators of endogenous time keeping which helps to optimize the plants chances of survival.

For example, cytokinin metabolism is tightly regulated by the circadian clock, and the phytohormones cytokinin, auxin and abscisic acid also exhibit diurnal variation in tobacco leaves, with peak levels 1 h after the middle of the light period (Novákova et al., 2005). Similarly, the production of ethylene peaks approximately 1 h after the subjective midday and troughs in the middle of the subjective night to undetectable levels, in sorghum seedlings (Morgan et al., 1997; Finlayson et al., 1999), in S. longipes (Kathiresan et al., 1996), in cotton plants (Jasoni et al., 2002) and Arabidopsis seedlings (Thain et al., 2004). The production of ethylene positively correlated with both ACO transcript and the ACO activity levels in these studies. In contrast, neither the ACC content (Emery et al., 1997) nor four of the S. longipes-ACS transcripts identified (Kathiresan et al., 1998) correlate with ethylene production. However, ethylene production levels are tightly correlated with Arabidopsis-ACS8 steady-state transcript levels, with an ethylene peak at subjective midday and a trough in the middle of the subjective night (Thain et al., 2004). Further, light controls the expression of AT-ACS8 by negative feedback regulation through ethylene signalling superimposed on the endogenous circadian regulation. Light was found to regulate the biosynthesis of ethylene directly (Jasoni et al., 2002) in leaf tissue, provided that carbon dioxide is not limiting (Grodzinski et al., 1982; 1983; Kao and Yang, 1982; Yang and Hoffman, 1984; Poneleit and Dilley, 1992). Earlier studies had reported that the conversion of ACC to ethylene was inhibited by light (Gepstein and Thimann, 1980; De Laat et al., 1981; Wright, 1981). However, in these studies the leaf tissues were incubated in enclosed containers under light or dark conditions where the concentrations of carbon dioxide were not maintained and therefore decreased or increased as a result of photosynthetic or respiratory activities. A circadian-type rhythm has been observed in an ACO from the green leaf tissue of white clover (TR-ACO2), where both the accumulation and activity of ACO peak at 12 am and at 12 pm with a trough at 9 pm (Du and McManus, 2006), which suggests the absence of a light regulated mechanism.

Also, rubisco activase mRNA in apple plantlets displays a typical oscillating pattern of expression, with minimum expression observed at midnight (< 15 %) and maximum expression observed 2 h into the light period, and then dropping back to 20 % of the maximum expression 2 h before the beginning of the dark period (Watillon et al., 1993). Also aldose-6-phosphate reductase (A6PR), a key enzyme in the biosynthesis of sorbitol (a sugar alcohol) showed significant diurnal fluctuations in apple leaves, with the highest A6PR activity observed at 10 am under natural light conditions, approximately 30 % higher than the activity determined at
night (Zhou et al., 2001), sorbitol, the major photosynthate in Rosaceae (such as apple, peach and pear; Nii, 1997) also exhibited a strong circadian rhythm in mature leaves of apple in concert with A6PR.

1.6 *Malus domestica* L. Borkh. (Apple)

The genus *Malus* consists of about 15 primary species, including 2 from Europe, 4 from North America, and the rest from Asia (Westwood, 1993), but there is no agreement among taxonomists as to how many species this genus comprises (Gardiner et al., 2007). Most of our domestic varieties derive from *Malus pumila* Mill., the common apple of Europe (Westwood, 1993; Harris et al., 2002). *Malus domestica* belongs to the family Rosaceae, and together with other species forms the subfamily Maloideae (Challice, 1974). The origin of the basic haploid number of 17 for *Malus* and other Pomoideae has been suggested by several studies to have evolved by hybridization between the sub-families Spiraeoideae (haploid 9) and Prunoideae (haploid 8) (Challice and Westwood, 1973; Challice, 1974; Lespinasse et al., 1999; 2000). This resulted in an allopolyploid with a basic haploid number of 17 (Newcomb et al., 2006) and an estimated genome size of 743 to 796 Mb (Arumuganathan and Earle, 1991). Earlier studies suggested a basic haploid number of 7 (also common in other genera of Rosaceae) which doubled, with three of the chromosomes repeated a third time leading to the haploid number of 17 (Darlington and Moffett, 1930), and an autoploidy explanation derived from the 9 haploidy of Spiraeoideae (Morgan et al., 1994). Although the majority of the cultivated apples are ancient tetraploids they are functional diploids (2n = 34), some are thought to be complex polyploids (Korban and Chen, 1992). For example, even though apple (*Malus* Mill.) generally has a haploid number of 17, the somatic chromosome number can be 34, 51, 68 or 85. Apple cv Gala has 34 chromosomes (Westwood, 1993). Apple has a long juvenile period (6 to 8 years), a high level of self-incompatibility, and because of their allogamous nature have a high degree of heterozygosity, so that cultivars are propagated vegetatively (Lespinasse et al., 1999) by grafting scions onto rootstock (Jensen et al., 2003). Also dwarfing and some insect resistance traits can be conferred by rootstocks (Ferree and Carlson, 1987).

Apple is a deciduous, rarely evergreen tree or shrub (Westwood, 1993). The three types of apple leaf are designated: spur leaves; bourse shoot leaves and extension shoot leaves. Extension shoot leaves are the most recently classified and these leaves are found on shoots that extend from non-fruiting branches. A spur is a short woody shoot that is the primary fruiting structure for most fruit trees. The spur leaves (generally small leaves) grow in a rosette formation just above the scale scars of the spur on the structure known as the bourse. The bourse shoot then grows from a bud on the bourse structure from early to mid-October and
finish their extension by mid to late January at latitude 39° 28' and longitude 176° 49' (Havelock North, in the Hawkes Bay, New Zealand). The leaves on the bourse shoot are called bourse shoot leaves. Both spur leaves (primary leaves) and bourse leaves (secondary leaves), are therefore closely associated with fruiting. Spur leaves develop very early (often before flowering), and tend to senesce a few months later (generally by the end of petal fall). Bourse leaves, by contrast, develop more slowly and appear later in the season. The leaves grow larger and remain on the tree for a few months after the fruit has dropped off. The mineral content of apple fruit (calcium, magnesium and potassium) can be reduced by the removal of the bourse leaves early in the season (Volz et al., 1996), but the calcium content of apple fruit decreases more in response to spur leaf removal (Volz et al., 1996; Lang and Volz, 1998). [Calcium has been implicated as an important secondary messenger in the ethylene signal transduction pathway (Raz and Fluhr, 1992)]. Other hormones such as abscisic acid have been reported to stimulate climacteric ethylene biosynthesis following abscisic acid treatment of attached Granny Smith apples (Lara and Vendrell, 2000), however, plant hormonal cross-talk in apple is complex and requires further study (Klee, 2003). Malic acid, the predominant organic acid in apple and the main substrate for respiration in apple (via malate dehydrogenase or NAD malic enzyme), decreases as the acid is increasingly decarboxylated during the fruit ripening climacteric and thereby reduces the acidity of the fruit (Hulme and Rhodes, 1971).

Public sequence databanks now contain in excess of approximately 200,000 expressed sequence tags (ESTs) from apple, which correspond to approximately 23,000 contiguous sequences (clusters containing more than one EST) (Korban et al., 2004; Newcomb et al., 2006; Park et al., 2006) which can be interrogated to access the full length sequences of identified partial sequences. For a review of gene mapping in apple refer to Gardiner et al., (2007).

1.6.1 ACC Oxidase in *Malus domestica*

1.6.1.1 Expression of ACC Oxidase in Apple

*ACO* gene expression and its role in fruit ripening has been a major research focus for many years in apple (Ross et al., 1992; Dong et al., 1992 a and b; Dilley et al., 1995; Zhu et al., 1995; Bolitho et al., 1997; Atkinson et al., 1998; Tan and Bangerth, 2000; Costa et al., 2005; Cin et al., 2005; Park et al., 2006) with fewer studies on *ACO* gene expression in other tissues, for example the leaves. There is evidence from Southern hybridization analysis at low stringency (Ross et al., 1992) and *in situ* hybridizations (Zhu et al., 1995) that *ACO* genes may also be present in the apple genome as small families. Apple *pAP4-ACO* may contain heterozygous alleles of different molecular weights and restriction patterns (Castiglione et al., 1999).
An ethylene-related cDNA (clone \textit{pAP4}) from ripening apples was first cloned by Ross \textit{et al.}, (1992) in New Zealand and, simultaneously (in press at the same time), Dong \textit{et al.}, (1992a) isolated an identical ACO cDNA (\textit{pAE12}) from apple fruit, in California. The \textit{pAP4} apple sequence has been found at two loci in the cultivar Prima \times Fiesta, one on chromosome 5 and the other on chromosome 10 (Maliepaard \textit{et al.}, 1998). The \textit{pAP4} cDNA has been fused between the galactose inducible promoter and the terminator of the yeast expression vector pYES2, and transformed into \textit{Saccharomyces cerevisiae} strain F808 by Wilson \textit{et al.} (1993), allowing these cells to convert ACC to ethylene.

The apple \textit{pAP4-ACO} gene promoter has been studied through a series of 5' deletions fused to the GUS reporter gene and then transformed into tomato (Atkinson \textit{et al.}, 1998). Low sequence homology was observed between the apple \textit{pAP4-ACO} 5' sequence upstream of the coding sequence and the corresponding sequences of tomato (\textit{LE-ACO1}), melon (\textit{CM-ACO1}) and petunia (\textit{PH-ACO1}). Apple \textit{pAP4-ACO} promoter fragments of 1966 bp and 1199 bp conferred ripening-specific expression in transgenic tomato fruit, consistent with the northern analysis data showing that apple \textit{pAP4-ACO} is up-regulated in ripening apple fruit. However, no GUS activity was observed in developing (mature green) fruit or in other tissues, including leaves, wounded leaves, flowers or roots. A lack of GUS activity in the wounded leaves of the transgenic tomato plants is also consistent with the absence of wound-inducible \textit{pAP4-ACO} gene expression in apple leaves. The longer (1966 bp) sequence contains two potential ethylene responsive elements (ERE) and the shorter sequence contains a transcription factor binding site which is involved in floral tissue developmental identity. Interestingly, a shorter promoter sequence of 450 bp induced GUS expression in a basal fruit tissue-specific pattern, but without the ripening developmental pattern. Therefore, the \textit{AP4-ACO} promoter has at least 3 major regions: one related to tissue-specific regulation, one related to ripening specific expression and the third related to ethylene responses (Atkinson \textit{et al.}, 1998). This implies that the regulation of the ripening process, tissue-specificity, and the ethylene response are all directed by different binding factors.

\subsection{1.6.1.2 Purification, Characterization and Kinetic Properties of ACC Oxidase in Apple}

ACO has been isolated in crude extracts, partially purified or purified to homogeneity and characterized in the fruits of apple. ACO activity \textit{in vitro} has been demonstrated in apple fruit (Dong \textit{et al.}, 1992b; Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Kuai and Dilley, 1992; Dilley \textit{et al.}, 1993; Poneleit and Dilley, 1993; Fernández-Maculet \textit{et al.}, 1993; Dupille \textit{et al.}, 1993; Pirrung \textit{et al.}, 1993; Mizutani \textit{et al.}, 1995). However, the ACO has only been purified to near homogeneity or homogeneity from the fruits of apple by Dong \textit{et al.}, (1992), Fernández-
Introduction

Maculet et al., (1993), Dupille et al., (1993) and Pirrung et al., (1993) (refer Table 1.1). The degree of enzyme purification may influence the observed kinetic results. For example, in a crude extract there may be more than one isoform, whereas in an extract purified to homogeneity a single isoform is more likely to be present. Also in a crude extract the enzyme concentration may be more difficult to determine so that the amount of enzyme in the ACO assay could be overestimated. The specific activity for the extracts purified to homogeneity (18 nmol mg\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\); Pirrung et al., 1993), purified to near homogeneity (20 nmol mg\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\); Dong et al., 1992b) and partially purified (20 nmol mg\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\); Ponelet and Dilley, 1993) apparently have a similar degree of purity. However, the specific activity for the crude extracts determined by Kuai and Dilley (1992) of 40 to 100 nL mg\(^{-1}\) h\(^{-1}\) (ca. 1.78 to 4.5 nmol mg\(^{-1}\) h\(^{-1}\)) and by Fernández-Maculet and Yang, (1992) of 60 nL g\(^{-1}\) h\(^{-1}\) (ca. 2.67 nmol g\(^{-1}\) h\(^{-1}\)) are very low. Authentic ACO activity is determined in vitro using two criteria; firstly by comparing in vitro ethylene production with in vivo ethylene produced, after exogenous ethylene is administered to preclimacteric apple fruit (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992) or correlated with the ethylene produced during the climacteric in apple (Dilley et al., 1993), and secondly, by stereospecificity towards 2-ethyl-ACC (allocoronamic acid) stereoisomers for 1-butene production (Hoffman et al., 1982; Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992). To confirm that the purified protein from apple fruit had an amino sequence that corresponded to the deduced amino acid sequence of the apple ACO cDNA, clone pAE12 (Dong et al., 1992a), the protein was cleaved with cyanogen bromide (CNBr) and the fragments matched (Dong et al., 1992b), and also shared a strong identity to the deduced pTOM13 amino acid sequence (Dupille et al., 1993).

Determination of the molecular mass of purified ACO may give values different from those predicted by the cDNA sequence, as a consequence of possible post translational modifications (Table 1.1). For example, in eukaryotics a specific methionine amino-terminal peptidase (MAP) removes the initiator methionine when the initiator methionine is followed by (a residue with a relatively small side chain) A, S, G, V or P (Kendall and Bradshaw, 1992), and for A, S and G the amino terminus is acetylated (Boissel et al., 1985). However, when the adjacent residue is charged (E, D, K and R) processing does not occur (Rubinstein and Martin, 1983). Such post translational processing would block the N-terminus and could explain why no amino acid sequence was obtained originally from the purified ACO by Edman methods (Dong et al., 1992b). Further, electrospray mass spectrometry (EMS) showed that the molecular mass of an ACO purified from apple fruit (35.332 ± 5 amu) was approximately 50 amu higher than that predicted from the cDNA sequence with the initiator methionine removed, but that acetylation of the N-terminus would explain both the amu discrepancy and the inaccessibility of the N-terminus of ACO to sequencing (Pirrung et al., 1993). There is also the possibility of
glycosylation, but the absence of N-linked substitution at a potential glycosylation site in a sequenced peptide and lack of reactivity towards a mixture of seven different biotinylated lectins (Dupille et al., 1993), suggests the N-linked glycosylation is absent. However, the possibility of an O-glycosidic bond can not be ruled out. As the molecular mass of the native ACO from purified apple fruit is of a similar molecular mass to that of the denatured protein, it was assumed that the enzyme was active as a monomer (Dong et al., 1992b; Dupille et al., 1993). The purification, molecular masses, the range of pH optima and the Michaelis constants ($K_m$; a measure of the affinity an enzyme has for its substrate) for apple ACO at various stages of purification are shown in Table 1.1.

### 1.6.1.3 Requirement of Apple ACC Oxidase for Co-substrate and Co-factors

ACO extracted from apple fruit tissue has an absolute requirement for ascorbate in vitro (Dong et al., 1992b; Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Dilley et al., 1993), and follows Michaelis-Menton kinetics (Dupille et al., 1993; Dilley et al., 1993; Seo et al., 2004). Ascorbate is stoichiometrically converted to dehydroascorbate, and hence serves as a co-substrate in the conversion of ACC to ethylene by ACO being concurrently oxidized into dehydroascorbate (Dong et al., 1992). Dehydroascorbate, as an ascorbate analog, is slightly inhibitory to ethylene production ($K_i$ of 0.68 mM) (Dilley et al., 1993), while L-ascorbate acid-6-palmitate strongly inhibits ACO competitively ($K_i$ of 20 μM) (Dilley et al., 1993). Ferrous iron ($FeSO_4$) is required in the conversion of ACC to ethylene (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Dilley et al., 1993; Dupille et al., 1993) and is an absolute requirement (Dong et al., 1992).

Direct evidence for CO$_2$ activation on ACO activity in vitro first came from Dong et al. (1992b) who found that activity in vitro of the purified enzyme from apple fruit was completely abolished in a CO$_2$-free atmosphere, but that this was reversible. Other studies found that CO$_2$ was required to make ACO catalytically competent (Poneleit and Dilley, 1993; Pirrung et al., 1993). However, inclusion of sodium bicarbonate (NaHCO$_3$) in the assay buffer offers greater operational simplicity than using the gas (CO$_2$) and there is also evidence from recombinant apple ACO that HCO$_3^-$ (not CO$_2$) is the active species (Dilley et al., 1993). The effect of CO$_2$/HCO$_3^-$ on the kinetics of ACO is not simple. For example, as the CO$_2$/HCO$_3^-$ concentration is increased in vitro, the apparent $K_m$ for ACC, ascorbate, dioxygen and Fe$^{2+}$ have been observed to increase several fold for ACO purified from apple fruit to near homogeneity (Fernández-Maculet et al., 1993), from partially purified apple fruit extracts (Poneleit and Dilley, 1993) and in enzyme from crude apple fruit extracts (Mizutani et al., 1995), concomitant with an increase in the $V_{max}$ by as much as 10 fold (Poneleit and Dilley, 1993; Fernández-Maculet et al., 1993; Mizutani et al., 1995). Similarly, the affinity of ACO for CO$_2$ has been observed to decrease as
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Purity (fold)</th>
<th>Purification steps</th>
<th>Molecular mass (kDa)</th>
<th>pH</th>
<th>pH Optimum</th>
<th>K_m for ACC (µM)</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Crude extract</td>
<td>Slurry filtered and Centrifuged</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>7.4 - 6.7</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>Fernández-Maculet and Yang (1992)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Partially purified (10)</td>
<td>Polyethylene glycerol (PEG) fractionation</td>
<td>Calcium phosphate gel Absorption</td>
<td>7.2 - 7.6</td>
<td>5.8, 6.4, 8.6</td>
<td>2, 7, 20</td>
<td>Kuai and Dilley (1992)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dilley et al. (1993)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Near homogeneity (180)</td>
<td>DEAE Sepharose anion exchange</td>
<td>Phenyl Sepharose hydrophobic interaction</td>
<td>Sephadex G-150 gel filtration</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>*28, 121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Fernández-Maculet et al., (1993)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Homogeneity (170)</td>
<td>(NH_4)_2SO_4 precipitation Phenyl Sepharose hydrophobic interaction</td>
<td>DEAE Memsep 1000 anion exchange</td>
<td>Superose 12 gel filtration</td>
<td>Mono Q anion exchange</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Homogeneity (21)</td>
<td>(NH_4)_2SO_4 precipitation Butyl Toyopearl 650 M Hydrophobic interaction</td>
<td>DEAE Toyopearl anion exchange</td>
<td>Mono P chromatofocusing</td>
<td>Superdex 75 gel filtration</td>
<td>*35.3</td>
<td>740</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In vivo</td>
<td>Apple fruit tissue discs</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>8.1</td>
<td>Yip et al. (1988)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Homogeneity</td>
<td>Recombinant clone pAE12 expressed in E.coli; pAE20</td>
<td>Recombinant MD-ACO1</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>230</td>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Yoo et al. (2006); K_c 0.054</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 CO_2 (ambient, 20%) in MOPS buffer; 2 pH 7.2 in Tris-HCl buffer; and pH 7.6 in phosphate buffer; 3 K_m^{ACC} 6.4 determined at pH 7.2 in Tris-HCl; 4 pH in Tris-HCl buffer; 5 CO_2 (ambient, 5% and 20%); 6 K_m^{ACC} at 0.03% and 4% CO_2 respectively; 7 SDS-PAGE denatured; 8 electrospray mass spectrometry (EMS)
the levels of CO₂ increase (Mizutani et al., 1995). Further, the pH required for maximum enzyme activity shifts to the acidic side as the levels of CO₂ increase, even with the pH maintained by using a HCO₃⁻/CO₂ buffer. As CO₂ passes very rapidly through membranes where it hydrates and dissociates into H⁺ and HCO₃⁻ thereby lowering the intracellular pH, the physiological implications of this molecule on the activity of ACO are probably multi-dimensional. For example, photosynthesis may lower the endogenous CO₂ levels in the leaves whereas ripening fruit would likely have sufficient CO₂ to sustain ethylene production.

The Michaelis-constant (Km) for another substrate dioxygen, of the partially purified ACO from apple fruit was found to be 0.4 % (v/v) O₂ in the presence of 1 mM ACC (Kuai and Dilley, 1992). The concentration of internal oxygen which results in half-maximal ethylene production by apple fruit tissue is reported to be 0.2 % (v/v) (Burg, 1973). In addition, ACC concentration in apple fruit was observed to affect the Km for O₂ with the Km being 0.3 % (v/v) O₂ determined at 10 mM ACC, but 6.2 % (v/v) O₂ in the absence of ACC (Yip et al., 1988).

The requirements for co-substrate and co-factors are summarized in Table 1.2.

The extreme lability of the apple ACO is consistent with a non-haem iron protein (Pirrung et al., 1993), which has now been confirmed as neither phenylhydaxine nor 2-methyl-1,2-dipyridyl-1-propane inhibit apple ACO activity (Dupille et al., 1993). For example, ACO from the fruit of cv. Golden Delicious loses activity during turnover (Poneleit and Dilley, 1992; Pirrung et al., 1993; Dupille et al., 1993) with a half-life (t½) of approximately 2 h at 23 °C (Pirrung et al., 1993). When the reaction is allowed to proceed in vitro without supplemental CO₂ beyond 15 min, ACO is subject to catalytic inactivation (Poneleit and Dilley, 1992). Further, the enzyme is heat sensitive with a optimal temperature range from 23 °C to 30 °C (Pirrung et al., 1993; Dupille et al., 1993; Poneleit and Dilley, 1992; Charng et al., 2001), and decreased activity at 35 °C (Dupille et al., 1993) with complete inactivation at 100 °C for 5 min (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Kuai and Dilley, 1992). Even the storage of a crude extract at 2 °C or 4 °C reduces the activity of the enzyme (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Kuai and Dilley, 1992; Poneleit and Dilley, 1993). However, the addition of 1,10-phenanthroline (PA) to a purified extract of apple (incubated at 4 °C for 18 h under aerobic conditions) preserved 91.5 % of the initial ACO activity (Dupille et al., 1993), and concurs with the incubation of purified apple extract for 18 h at 4 °C under nitrogen (N₂; anaerobic conditions) where 92 % of ACO activity was preserved. In contrast, the extract under aerobic conditions without the addition of PA and incubated at 4 °C for 18 h was not stabilized and lost 80 % of the initial ACO activity (Dupille et al., 1993). As the instability of ACO was believed to be due to either the aerobic auto-oxidation of ascorbate catalysed by Fe³⁺ and/or the denaturation of the enzyme by Fe³⁺.
generated by oxidation of Fe^{2+} (Dupille et al., 1993), the addition of PA, an inhibitor of metalloproteases, probably prevents these processes through the chelation of Fe^{2+}.

### Table 1.2: Summary of the Requirements of Apple ACC Oxidase for Co-substrate and Co-factors

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Purity: Reference</th>
<th>Ascorbate mM</th>
<th>FeSO₄ μM</th>
<th>NaHCO₃ mM</th>
<th>CO₂ (gas phase) % (v/v)</th>
<th>O₂ (gas phase) % (v/v)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Crude extract</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Fernández-Maculet &amp; Yang, 1992)</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>150</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Mizutani et al., 1995)</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>150</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Partially purified</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Kuai and Dille, 1992)</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.1-20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Poneleit and Dille, 1993)</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.03, 5, 20</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Dille, 1993)</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.1-20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Near homogeneity</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Dong et al., 1992b)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Fernández-Maculet et al., 1993)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Homogeneity</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Dupille et al., 1993)</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>10 (20 + PA)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pirrung et al., 1993)</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Recombinant clone pAE12</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>expressed in E. coli; pAE20</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Charng et al., 2001)</td>
<td>120</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Yoo et al., 2006)</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>4.2</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Alpha-aminoisobutyrate (AIB; an analog of ACC) competitively inhibited the conversion of ACC to ethylene by ACO in vitro (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Charng et al., 1997), with a Kᵢ value of 5.7 mM for a crude extract of ACO (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992), while a recombinant ACO (clone pAE12; Dong et al., 1992a) expressed in E. coli (strain BL-21), had a Kᵢ for AIB of 14.7 mM (Charng et al., 1997). This indicates that the native enzyme from the crude extract is more sensitive to the inhibitor when compared with the recombinant enzyme (by approximately 2.5 fold). Cobalt ions (Co^{2+}) also inhibit the conversion of ACC to
ethylen (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Kuai and Dilley, 1992), where Co²⁺ at 50 μM resulted in 70 % inhibition (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992). Even in the absence of ACO, ACC was oxidized to ethylene in the presence of 100 μM of Co²⁺ at pH 7.2, and at higher pH values more ethylene was produced, while at low concentrations of Co²⁺ proportionately less ethylene was produced (2 μM =7 %, 10 μM =46 %, 25 μM =50 %; Kuai and Dilley, 1992). Purified ACO is also inhibited by amino acid hydroxmates which may act through both chelating and hydrophobic interactions at the active site (Pirrung et al., 1995). Other chelating agents, such as tropolones, inhibit ACO activity in vitro which was recovered in the presence of Fe²⁺ (Mizutani et al., 1995). A cyclobutane ACC analog 1-aminocyclobutane-1-carboxylate (ACBC), strongly inhibited the activity in vitro of the partially purified ACO from senescing carnation flowers (Kosugi et al., 1997), and it was suggested that ACBC could bind to the active site of ACO, which is likely also to occur with apple ACO.

Apple is a climacteric fruit, with a clear respiratory climacteric and ethylene peak associated with ripening (Park et al., 2006; Newcomb et al., 2006). Although the control for the onset of autocatalytic ethylene biosynthesis is not yet clear (Lara and Vendrell, 2000), it is well known that internal ethylene increases during fruit maturation (Lay-Yee et al., 1990; Atkinson et al., 1998; Tan and Bangerth, 2000). In preclimacteric fruit in vivo and in vitro ACO activity was not detected (Dilley et al., 1993), accumulation of the enzyme was not observed (Lara and Vendrell, 2000), and very little ethylene is produced (Dong et al., 1992b; Fernández and Yang, 1992). However, when treated with ethylene a parallel increase in ACO activities and the induction of ACO transcript (Dong et al., 1992b; Fernández and Yang, 1992), together with the formation of ACC and MACC is observed (Tan and Bangerth, 2000). But, exogenous ethylene did not overcome the inability of prematurely harvested fruit to produce sufficient ACC and ACO activity to trigger autocatalytic ethylene production (Tan and Bangerth, 2000; Lara and Vendrell, 2000). This data indicates that the earlier the preclimacteric fruits are harvested, the weaker the response to exogenous ethylene (Choi et al., 1994; Tan and Bangerth, 2000), so that the fruit is increasingly stimulated by ethylene as development progresses.

1.6.1.4 Localization of ACC Oxidase in Apple

Anderson et al. (1979) prepared protoplasts from apple fruit tissue and found that ethylene production was greatly inhibited by Triton X-100 and osmotic shock that caused lysis of the protoplasts. Over 90 % of the total protein in the homogenate was associated with the pellet fraction in the absence of PVPP and then was solubilized in 25 mM MOPS with 0.1 % Triton X-100 (Dong et al., 1992b). Since the detergent rapidly inactivates the enzyme, 30 % (v/v) glycerol was included and following solubilization the detergent was removed by protein
adsorption to a DEAE-sepharose column. Observations that ACO from apple is purified primarily by hydrophobic interactions (Pirrung et al., 1993), suggests that the enzyme can form significant associations with hydrophobic surfaces. Both hydrophobic and electrostatic interactions have been observed using crystallography (Zhang et al., 2004), to be involved in the interlocking of the C-terminus region of adjacent ACO monomers. However, due to the restraints of the crystalline lattice the interaction between adjacent monomers may be artefactual, and may instead be the means by which ACO retains a close association with the lipid bilayer. ACO activity is detected only in intact protoplasts and vacuoles, where the integral membrane structure, and potential, is thought to maintain Fe2+ and ascorbate in sufficiently high concentrations (Lieberman, 1979; Fernández Maculet and Yang, 1992; Dong et al., 1992b). Consequently, when these membranes are homogenized ethylene biosynthesis is totally lost. Five percent (w/v) polyvinyl polypyrrolidone (PVPP) greatly improves recovery of the enzyme by binding polyphenols in the apple tissue (Kuai and Dilley, 1992; Fernández Maculet and Yang, 1992) and can be used as an alternative to 0.1 % (v/v) Triton X-100 (Dong et al., 1992b; Fernández Maculet and Yang, 1992). Immunocytological experiments performed by Rombaldi et al., (1994) indicated that ACO is located at the cell wall in the pericarp of climacteric apple. Ramassay et al., (1998) combined cell fractionation and immunocytological methods and found that ACO is mainly associated with the external face of the plasma membrane of apple fruit, a periplasmic location. However, due to lack of motifs such as transmembrane helices in the sequence of ACO to suggest that it is an integral membrane protein and the absence of an N-terminal conserved signal sequence which is considered to be required for targeting (Pirrung et al., 1993), it was proposed that ACO is not secreted via the endoplasmic reticulum (ER) pathway (Rombaldi et al., 1994). Chung et al., (2002) observed that the in vitro translated apple ACO was not co-processed or imported by the canine pancreatic rough microsomes (CPRM), a system widely used to identify signal peptides for protein translocation across ER, suggesting that apple ACO does not contain a signal peptide for ER transport. However, it is known that not all plasma membrane or secretory proteins contain an N-terminal consensus sequence that is cleaved following translocation across the ER membrane. Recently, Chung et al. (2002) re-examined the subcellular localization of ACO in apple fruit by immunogold labelling with a highly specific antibody raised against the recombinant apple enzyme. It was demonstrated that apple ACO was located mainly, if not solely, in the cytosol of climacteric apple fruit mesocarp cells.

1.6.1.5 The Focus of Apple Studies

Many physiological studies have investigated the relationship between the leaves and fruit of apple (Tustin et al., 1997; Greer et al., 1997; Wünsche and Palmer, 1997; Wünsche et al., 2000; Greer et al., 2002) with regards to the contribution of fixed carbon from leaf tissue for
apple fruit development and growth, and for subsequent carbohydrate storage to fuel leaf initiation and floral bud break and development in the spring. Similarly, many studies have examined the roles of ACO and ethylene in apple fruit (Ross et al., 1992; Dong et al., 1992a; 1992b; Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Dupille et al., 1993; Pirrung et al., 1993; Dilley et al., 1993; 1995; Ramassamy et al., 1998; Atkinson et al., 1998; Tan and Bangerth, 2000; Lara and Vendrell, 2000; Chung et al., 2002; Tartachnyk and Blanke, 2004; Costa et al., 2005). By contrast, ACO has not been examined in the leaves of apple, although the role of ACO in leaf senescence has been undertaken in other species (John et al., 1995; Kim et al., 1998; Hunter et al., 1999; Nie et al., 2002; Chen et al., 2003; Chen and McManus, 2006). Since ACO has also been identified as a senescence associated gene (SAG) in the leaf tissue of many species (Barry et al., 1996; Lassere et al., 1996; Hunter et al., 1999; Nakatsaku et al., 1998; Ruperti et al., 2001; Rasori et al., 2003; Chen and McManus, 2006), which is induced at the onset of senescence, these observations suggest that a SAG may also be present in apple leaf tissue. Based on these observations, a model may be developed in which leaf senescence could be delayed if the SAG ACO in leaf tissue was down-regulated, which in turn could lengthen the photosynthetic capacity of the plant, leading to increased photosyntheate and hence carbohydrate storage for the following spring. Therefore, the broad aim of this study is to investigate ACO in the apple leaf tissue of the recently bred Royal Gala cultivar (developed in the 1930/40s and introduced in the 1960/70s from a cross between the Kidd’s Orange Red and the Golden Delicious cultivars; Gardiner et al., 2007), to determine if different members of the ACO gene family are expressed during leaf ontogeny, with particular reference to leaf maturation and senescence.
1.7 Objective and Aims of the Thesis

The primary objective of this thesis is to isolate and characterize the expression of ACO genes from leaf tissues of apple (*Malus domestica*) at different developmental stages. The focus is on leaf tissue to act as a point-of-difference from the many studies that have focussed, thus far, on apple fruit tissue.

To achieve the primary objective, the following experimental aims were attempted.

- Isolation of RNA sequences corresponding to *MD-ACO* genes from the leaves of apple;
- Investigation of the differential expression of the *MD-ACO* genes in leaf and in fruit tissue at different developmental stages;
- Raise antibodies to the protein products of the *MD-ACO* genes, and to examine differential protein accumulation in leaf and fruit tissues at different developmental stages;
- Express the *MD-ACO* gene in *E. coli* and to compare the kinetic parameters of each MD-ACO isoform as a recombinant protein; and
- Examine the diurnal expression of MD-ACO genes and accumulation of MD-ACO proteins over a 24 h period.
Chapter Two MATERIALS AND METHODS

Unless otherwise stated, all of the chemicals used were from Sigma Chemical Company or BDH Laboratory Supplies, and of analytical grade or better. All solutions were made using water purified by reverse osmosis (RO), followed by filtration by microfiltration through a system containing ion exchange, solvent exchange, organic and inorganic removal cartridges (Mill-Q, Millipore Corporation). Sterilization by autoclaving at 103 kPa for at least 20 min or by filtering through a sterile 0.22 μm nitrocellulose filter (Millex®-GS sterilizing filter unit, Millipore Corp.). Centrifugations were carried out using an Eppendorf microcentrifuge 5417C (Pierce LabSupply) or a Sorvall® RC-5B centrifuge, using rotor SS-34 or rotor GS3; or a benchtop Sorvall® RT7 (DuPont Instruments, USA) or benchtop Eppendorf Centrifuge 5702R A-4-38. A digital pH meter (Radiometer Copenhagen, France) was used to measure the pH of solutions. An Ultrospec 3000 UV/visible spectrophotometer (Pharmacia Biotech) or a NanoDrop®ND-1000 spectrophotometer (NanoDrop Technologies) were used to measure the optical density values of RNA and DNA. An 8-channel single-beam microplate absorption photometer (Anthos Labtec Instruments) was used to measure the absorbance values of protein. The details of these and the other reagents and specialised equipment are listed in Table 2.1.

2.1 Plant Material

2.1.1 Harvesting of Plant Material

Bourse shoot leaves were harvested at one of the Hawkes Bay Research Centre orchards of HortResearch in Havelock North (latitude 39° 40'; longitude 176° 53') in the Hawkes Bay, New Zealand. Fifteen fully grown and fruiting Royal Gala apple trees (10 years old), grafted onto M9 dwarfing rootstock, were selected for the project and not used for any other experimental purposes. The trees were planted at a spacing of 5 x 2.5 metres and were grown in north-south orientated rows, trained as tender spindles. The bourse shoot leaves are shown in relation to the spur leaves and the fruit as Figure 2.1(A), and the relation of the apical bourse shoot leaves to the basal bourse shoot leaves are shown as Figure 2.1(B). A detailed description of these leaf types is given in section 1.6.

Bourse shoots were tagged prior to the collection of leaf samples in order to randomize the samples, this was particularly important later in the season because the bourse shoot leaves change colour differentially during senescence. However, for sampling early in the season, as the bourse shoots grow from a bud on the bourse structure from early to mid October and finish their extension growth by mid to late January, tagging was typically carried out either on the day of leaf sampling, or a day or so earlier, so that the selection of the bourse shoots was
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Company</th>
<th>Full Company Name</th>
<th>Company Address</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>All Pro Imaging</td>
<td>All Pro Imaging Corp</td>
<td>Hicksville, NY, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ajax</td>
<td>Ajax Chemicals</td>
<td>Auburn, NSW, Australia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alltech</td>
<td>Alltech Associates Inc.</td>
<td>Deerfield, IL, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ambion</td>
<td>Ambion® The RNA Company</td>
<td>Austin, Texas, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amersham</td>
<td>Amersham Biosciences</td>
<td>Buckinghamshire, UK</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthos</td>
<td>Anthos Labtech Instruments</td>
<td>Salzburg, Austria</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Applied Biosystems</td>
<td>Applied Biosystems</td>
<td>Foster City, CA, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Becton Dickenson</td>
<td>Becton Dickenson Medical Pte Ltd</td>
<td>Rutherford, NJ, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BDH</td>
<td>British Drug Houses</td>
<td>Poole, Dorset, UK</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bio-Rad</td>
<td>Bio-Rad Laboratories</td>
<td>Hercules, CA, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BOC Gases</td>
<td>BOC Gases (NZ) Ltd</td>
<td>PN &amp; Hawkes Bay, NZ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boehringer Mannheim</td>
<td>Biohringer Mannheim Biochemica</td>
<td>Mannheim, Germany</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Constant Systems</td>
<td>Constant Systems Ltd</td>
<td>Northants, UK</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DuPont</td>
<td>DuPont Instruments</td>
<td>Wilmington, DE, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Difco</td>
<td>Difco Laboratories</td>
<td>Detroit, MI, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eppendorf</td>
<td>Eppendorf AG (Pierce LabSupply)</td>
<td>Hamburg, Germany</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fujifilm</td>
<td>Fuji Photo Film Co Ltd</td>
<td>Tokyo, Japan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gibco-BRL</td>
<td>Life Technologies (Gibo-BRL)</td>
<td>Gaithersburg, MD, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hewlett Packard</td>
<td>Hewlett Packard Corporation</td>
<td>Berkshire, UK</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hitachi</td>
<td>Hitachi Corporation</td>
<td>Tokyo, Japan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hybaid</td>
<td>Hybaid Ltd</td>
<td>Middlesex, UK</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Invitrogen</td>
<td>Invitrogen™</td>
<td>Carlsbad, CA, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Immobilin-P</td>
<td>Millipore Corporation</td>
<td>Bedford, MA, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NanoDrop</td>
<td>NanoDrop Technologies</td>
<td>Rockland, DE, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nunc</td>
<td>Nalge Nunc International</td>
<td>Roskilde, Germany</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pall</td>
<td>Pall Gelman Laboratories</td>
<td>Ann Arbor, MI, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perkin Elmer</td>
<td>Perkin Elmer Life Sciences Inc.</td>
<td>Boston, MA, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pharmacia</td>
<td>Pharmacia Biotech</td>
<td>Uppsala, Sweden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PP Systems</td>
<td>Portable Photosynthetic Systems</td>
<td>Haverhill, MA, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Promega</td>
<td>Promega</td>
<td>Madison, WI, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Qiagen</td>
<td>Qiagen Inc.</td>
<td>Valencia, CA, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reidel-de Haen ag seelze</td>
<td>Reidel-de haen ag seelze</td>
<td>Hannover, Germany</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roche</td>
<td>Roche diagnostics Gmbh</td>
<td>Mannheim, Germany</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Savant</td>
<td>Savant Instruments</td>
<td>Farmingdale, NY, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Serva Feinbiochemica</td>
<td>Serva Feinbiochemica</td>
<td>Heidelberg, Germany</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shimadzu</td>
<td>Shimadzu Corporation</td>
<td>Kyoto, Japan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sigma</td>
<td>Sigma Chemical Company</td>
<td>St Louis, MO, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tropix</td>
<td>Tropix</td>
<td>Bedford, MA, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Univar</td>
<td>Univar</td>
<td>Auburn, NSW, Australia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VirTis</td>
<td>The VirTis Company</td>
<td>Gardiner, NY, USA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vivaspin</td>
<td>Vivasience Ltd</td>
<td>Hannover, Germany</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whatman</td>
<td>Whatman International Ltd</td>
<td>Maidstone, UK</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 2.1: Names and Addresses of the Manufactures of Reagents and Specialised Equipment.
Figure 2.1: The Bourse Shoot Leaves of Apple

The bourse shoot leaves of Gala apple in relation to the fruit (A), and the full length of the bourse shoot from basal leaves to apical leaves (B).
standardized. For example, as the bourse shoot buds begin and finish their extension growth at different times, together with the fact that bourse shoots vary in length and leaf number, during this growth phase it would not have been possible or appropriate to pre-tag earlier. Leaf samples were always collected at 11 am, snap frozen in liquid nitrogen and then stored at -80 °C. Later in the season when the bourse shoot growth had terminated, all of the appropriate bourse shoots were tagged for the duration of the collection period. For example, leaves were typically collected twice prior to fruit removal and then at approximately 10 day intervals until leaf fall or necrosis. Fruiting and non-fruiting bourse shoots at approximately 50 cm in length were selected.

2.1.2 Chlorophyll Quantification

Leaf tissue was excised free from the midrib, frozen in liquid nitrogen, ground to a fine powder under liquid nitrogen, and then 50 to 200 mg transferred to a microcentrifuge tube (in triplicate) where the chlorophyll was extracted with 1 mL of N, N-dimethylformamide (DMF). To do so samples were mixed vigorously by vortexing and left for 24 h at 4° C in the dark (Moran and Porath, 1980). Prior to chlorophyll determination the samples were mixed vigorously by vortexing, and the cellular debris pelleted by centrifugation at 20,800 x g for 6 min at room temperature. An aliquot (100 μL) of the supernatant was added to DMF (1 mL) in a microcentrifuge tube, mixed well before transferring to a quartz cuvette, and the optical density at both 647 nm and 664.5 nm determined (in triplicate) using an Hitachi UV-Vis spectrophotometer (model U-1100, Hitachi). DMF was used for 100% absorbance at both 647 nm and 664.5 nm. Chlorophyll concentrations were calculated using the formula of Inskeep and Bloom, 1985 (Moran, 1982). From the known weight of leaf tissue μg g⁻¹ FW was calculated.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Chlorophyll } a & = 12.7 A_{664.5} - 2.79 A_{647} \quad (\mu g \text{ mL}^{-1}) \\
\text{Chlorophyll } b & = 20.7 A_{647} - 4.62 A_{664.5} \quad (\mu g \text{ mL}^{-1}) \\
\text{Total Chlorophyll} & = 17.9 A_{647} + 8.08 A_{664.5} \quad (\mu g \text{ mL}^{-1})
\end{align*}
\]

2.1.2.1 Statistical Analysis

The existence of significant differences between data was tested using an Analysis of Variance (ANOVA), performed using Microsoft Excel 2000. A difference between means at the 5 % (P ≤ 0.05; 95 %) was considered significant, with a difference at the 1 % level (P ≤ 0.01; 99 %) being highly significant.
Materials and Methods

Calculation of standard errors: the variance between data replicates in this thesis are expressed as standard errors. All of the graphs and data were generated, and the standard errors calculated, using the software programme Microsoft Excel version 2000 (Microsoft, USA). The standard error is calculated by first calculating the standard deviation (SD), using the Microsoft Excel SD function, then dividing the SD by the square root of the number of samples.

2.1.3 Leaf Carbon Assimilation Measurements

Physiological (in the field) measurements were able to be obtained using a Circas-1 portable photosynthetic system (PP Systems, Haverhill, MA, USA) which contains a combined open infra-red gas analysis system. Leaf carbon assimilation was measured as net carbon exchange (NCE), also described as net photosynthesis or pn, with units of μmol. m⁻² s⁻¹. The system analyses the internal concentration of CO₂ in the leaf in ppm, and also compares the CO₂ flowing into the leaf with the CO₂ flowing out.

2.1.4 Protein Extraction from Apple Tissue

Reagents:
- Extraction buffer: 0.1 mM Tris-HCl buffer (pH 7.5), containing 30 mM sodium-ascorbate, 10 % (v/v) glycerol, 4 mM DTT, 1.0 % (v/v) Triton

ACO was extracted from apple leaf and fruit tissue by a very simple modified procedure, based on that of Britsch and Grisebach (1986) for the extraction of flavanone-3-hydroxylase and modified by Fernández-Maculet and Yang (1992) for ACO extraction from the fruits of apple.

Leaf tissue (free from the midrib) or apple fruit tissue was ground under liquid nitrogen to a fine power. Extraction buffer was added in a 3:1 (v/w) ratio to the ground frozen powder, and the mixture vortexed vigorously for 2 to 3 min before centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 20 min at 4 °C. The supernatant (crude extract) was then transferred to a fresh tube, and the protein concentration determined by the Bradford protein assay (section 2.3.7), prior to separation on SDS-PAGE (section 2.3.10) in preparation for western blot analysis (section 2.3.11)

2.2 Molecular Methods

2.2.1 Growth and Storage of E. coli

2.2.1.1 Luria-Bertani (LB) Media and LB Ampicillin Plates

Reagents:
- Bacto-tryptone (Difco Laboratories)
Materials and Methods

- Bacto-yeast extract (Difco Laboratories)
- NaCl
- Ampicillin (Sigma)
- Agar (Gibco-BRL)
- Glycerol

Luria-Bertani (LB) broth: 1% (w/v) bacto-tryptone, 0.5% (w/v) bacto-yeast extract, 1% (w/v) NaCl. The components were dissolved in water, the pH adjusted to 7.0 (using NaOH) prior to autoclaving, after which the sterile broth was stored at room temperature.

Solid media was made by adding agar 1.5% (w/v) to the LB broth, and then autoclaving. Prior to pouring the molten media into sterile petri dishes (plates) in a lamina flow cabinet, the liquid was cooled to ca. 40 °C, then sterile ampicillin was added to give a final concentration of 100 μg mL⁻¹ (Amp100), from a stock solution (100 mg mL⁻¹). The ampicillin had been sterilized using an acrodisc® syringe filter 0.2 μm supor® membrane (Pall Gelman Laboratories) and stored at -20 °C. Each of the LB-Amp100 plates was then sealed with parafilm and stored at 4 °C.

E. coli were grown in LB broth and ampicillin (100 μg mL⁻¹) at 37 °C with shaking at ~200 rpm. To store bacteria for a longer time, cultures were preserved as frozen glycerol stocks in cryotubes (Nunc). To do this E. coli cells in LB broth (700 μl) were added to glycerol (300 μl of 100% (v/v)), the suspension snap frozen in liquid nitrogen and stored at -80 °C. E. coli cultures were revived from the frozen glycerol stocks every few months by plating an aliquot of the frozen stock onto fresh LB-Amp100 agar plates. E. coli were also grown on LB-Amp100 plates typically overnight (~16 h) at 37 °C, and could be stored on LB-Amp100 plates at 4 °C for periods of up to three to five months.

2.2.1.2 Preparation of Competent Cells

Reagents:
- CaCl₂
- Glycerol
- LB broth (refer section 2.2.1.1)

E. coli cells used for transformation were prepared from E. coli strain DH5α (Gibco BRL) and E. coli strain BL-21-SI™ (Invitrogen). LB broth (10 mL) was inoculated with a single colony of E. coli and incubated overnight at 37 °C at 200 rpm. Fresh LB broth (40 mL) was then
inoculated with 0.4 mL of the overnight culture and incubated at 37 °C until cell growth reached an optical density of 0.4 at 600 nm ($A_{600} = 0.4$); typically 2 to 3 h. The bacteria were pelleted by centrifugation at 2,500 x g for 5 min at 4 °C, and after discarding the supernatant, the bacterial pellet was resuspended in 10 mL of ice-cold CaCl$_2$ (60 mM), a further 10 mL CaCl$_2$ (60 mM) was then added and the cells incubated on ice (30 min). The cell suspension was then centrifuged at 2,500 x g for 5 min at 4 °C, the supernatant discarded and the cells resuspended in 4 mL of CaCl$_2$ (60 mM) containing glycerol 15% (v/v). The competent cells were then stored as 300 µl aliquots at -80 °C.

2.2.2 Isolation of Ribonucleic Acid (RNA)

RNA is tolerant of salt, solvent and temperature conditions. It is highly resistant to shear and can be vortex-mixed without detriment (Strommer et al., 1993). The principal concern of working with RNA is the presence of ribonuclease (RNase), both endogenous (released from membrane bound organelles) and in the environment, which can be difficult to eliminate or inactivate.

To prevent RNA degradation during extraction, all glassware used was well-washed using mixed acid overnight, then rinsed thoroughly in Milli-Q water and wrapped with tinfoil and baked in a dry oven at 180 °C for at least 4 h. All disposable plastics were either new, or treated overnight in 0.3% (v/v) H$_2$O$_2$ (Andrew Industrial Ltd), then rinsed well with water and autoclaved in tinfoil. Solutions used for RNA work were not used for other purposes and clean disposable gloves were always used and regularly changed. Chemicals were dispensed by pouring, or by using spatulas that had been baked at 180 °C for at least 4 h. If pH adjustment of a solution was necessary, the pH electrode was incubated in NaOH (50 mM) for 10 to 15 min and rinsed with water. Any gel apparatus was sterilized with NaOH (0.1M) for a minimum of 20 min before rinsing with water.

2.2.2.1 Extraction of Total RNA

Hot Borate Method

Total DNA was isolated using a hot borate method (Hall et al., 1978; Wan and Wilkins, 1994; Wilkins and Smart, 1996; Hunter and Reid, 2001; Moser et al., 2004).

Reagents:
- DEPC treated water
- LiCl
- KCl
Materials and Methods

- sodium acetate
- nonidet (P40)
- potassium acetate
- PVP-40
- 2-mercaptoethanol
- Proteinase K (Roche)
- ethanol
- isopropanol
- isoamyl alcohol
- Borate extraction buffer: 0.2 M di-Sodium tetraborate decahydrate (Borax), 30 mM EDTA pH 8, 1% (w/v) SDS, 1% (w/v) deoxycholate (sodium salt). To dissolve, add components to pre-warmed (50 °C) RNase free water, allow to cool, then adjust the pH to 9 with NaOH, autoclave and store in 50 mL falcon tubes at -20 °C.

Borate extraction buffer was thawed to room temperature and put into a water bath set at 50 °C, where 2 % (w/v) PVP-40, 1 % (w/v) nonidet and 2% (w/v) 2-mercaptoethanol was then added, the mixture shaken vigorously with the cap tightly screwed on, and the water bath temperature adjusted to 85 °C.

Plant tissue was ground under liquid nitrogen with a pre-chilled pestle and mortar, while adding further liquid nitrogen to tissue as needed. Using a pre-chilled spatula, 0.3 g of the powdered tissue was transferred to a 1.5 mL microcentrifuge tube and borate extraction buffer (1 mL) preheated to 85 °C was added immediately. The components were mix thoroughly by vortexing at top speed (~30 s – 1 min) and left at 85 °C for 4 min. Proteinase K (0.5 mg) was added to the slurry following removal from the 85 °C water bath (rapid denaturation of proteinase K occurs at temperatures above 65 °C), mixed well, the top of the closed Eppendorf was securely wrapped with parafilm for extra protection in case of leakage and then the mixture was incubated (horizontally) at 42 °C for 1 h 30 min at 100 rpm. Immediately following incubation, 2 M KCl was added (to a final concentration of 160 mM), mixed and stored horizontally on ice for 45 min with gentle shaking of 100 rpm to allow proteins and other material to precipitate out of solution. The debris was removed by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 25 min at 4 °C, after which the supernatant was transferred to a fresh tube, and 8 M LiCl (to a final concentration of 2 M) and 2-mercaptoethanol (to a final concentration of 1% (v/v)) were both added. After mixing well, the samples were incubated on ice at 4 °C overnight and the precipitated RNA collected by centrifugation at 20 800 x g at 4 °C for 45 min.
Materials and Methods

The pellet was resuspended in sterile water at room temperature, an equal volume of chloroform: isooamyl alcohol (24:1) added, the aqueous and organic phases mixed by vortexing and then separated by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 5 min at room temperature. The upper aqueous phase was removed to a new tube and the RNA precipitated with ethanol (section 2.2.4.1), resuspended in a small volume of DEPC treated water, quantified (section 2.2.2.2) and stored at -80 °C until required.

Notes:
LiCl washes to remove pigments do not appear to be detrimental to the quantity or quality of the RNA but are probably unnecessary.

A potassium acetate precipitation step facilitates the removal of polysaccharides, residual proteins, pigments and other salt insoluble material, but the RNA yield is greatly reduced.

2-mercaptoethanol can be replaced with DTT; and Nonidet can be replaced with Igepal (Sigma)
PVP-40 was preferred to PVPP as the latter forms a matrix making recovery of the supernatant difficult.

TRI Reagent Method

This method was also assessed for the isolation of RNA in this thesis. However, none of the results presented in the thesis used RNA isolated using this method.

Reagents:
- TRI Reagent ® (Molecular Research Centre Inc., Cincinnati, OH, USA)
- Chloroform
- Isopropanol
- Ethanol
- Sodium citrate
- NaCl

Total RNA was isolated using TRI reagent (a solution of phenol and thiocyanate) according to a version of the single-step RNA isolation reagent method developed by Chomczynski and Sacchi (1987) with some modifications. Finely ground leaf tissue (0.5-1.0 g) was transferred to a 50 mL sterile screw-capped disposable polypropylene tube, and TRI reagent (5 mL) was added. The extraction mix was homogenized by shaking vigorously for 15 s, before being centrifuged at 12 000 x g for 1 min at 4 °C to remove extracellular membranes, polysaccharides and denatured proteins. The supernatant was transferred to a fresh tube and left at room temperature for 5 min to permit complete dissociation of nucleoprotein complexes, after which time isoamyl alcohol free chloroform (1 mL) was added, than shaken vigorously for 15 s. After keeping the suspension at room temperature for 10 min, the mixture was centrifuged for 15 min at 12 000 x g at 4 °C. With centrifugation, the mixture separated into a lower red phenol-chloroform phase containing proteins, an interphase containing the DNA, and the colourless aqueous phase containing RNA. The RNA containing solution was carefully pipetted into a fresh
polypropylene tube and then 1.25 mL each of isopropanol and high salt precipitation solution (0.8 M sodium citrate and 1.2 M NaCl) was added, mixed well and incubated for 5-10 min at room temperature. The tubes were then centrifuged at 12,000 x g for 8 min at 4 °C to pellet the RNA (white or clear pellet) while leaving polysaccharides in the supernatant. After discarding the supernatant, the RNA pellet was washed in 75% (v/v) ethanol (5-6 mL), and the tubes centrifuged at 7,500 x g for 5 min at 4 °C. After careful removal of the supernatant, the pellet was then air dried briefly (5 min) by inverting the tubes on clean paper towels and the pellet then resuspended in DEPC treated water (50 µL), transferred to a microcentrifuge tube and stored at -20 °C. For long-term storage, RNA was stored at -80 °C as an ethanol precipitate. This protocol was also scaled down to allow RNA isolation to be performed using microcentrifuge tubes rather than 50 mL tubes.

2.2.2.2 Quantification of RNA in Solution

RNA concentrations were determined by measuring the absorbance of each solution at 260 nm (A_{260}) and 280 nm (A_{280}) using an Ultrospec 3000 UV/visible spectrophotometer (Pharmacia Biotech). Samples were diluted appropriately and aliquots of 100 µL transferred to a slightly larger quartz cuvette and measured against a water blank. For RNA, an OD_{260} of 1.0 corresponds to approximately 40 µg mL^{-1} (Sambrook et al., 1989). The RNA concentration was calculated using the following formula:

\[ \text{RNA concentration in } \mu\text{g mL}^{-1} = \frac{A_{260} \times \text{dilution factor} \times 40}{100} \]

The purity of the RNA was determined by measuring the A_{260nm} / A_{280nm} ratio. Relatively pure RNA solutions have an A_{260nm} / A_{280nm} ratio of 2.0 (Sambrook et al., 1989), a value that decreases with the presence of contaminants such as proteins and phenol (if used for RNA isolation).

When sample volumes were limiting a NanoDrop®ND-1000 spectrophotometer (NanoDrop Technologies) was also used to measure the absorbance of each solution at 260 nm (A_{260}) and 280 nm (A_{280}). Samples were diluted appropriately and aliquots of 2 µL were measured against a water blank.

2.2.3 Reverse Transcriptase Polymerase Chain Reaction (RT-PCR)

The prokaryotic (retroviral) enzyme 'Reverse Transcriptase' was used to synthesize the first single strand of DNA complimentary to mRNA using an oligo d(T)_{15} primer. The mRNA is
then degraded and the second strand of DNA synthesized. This copy or complimentary double stranded DNA can then be used to clone into plasmid vector.

2.2.3.1 Generation of cDNA Using Reverse Transcriptase

Reagents:
- Expand reverse transcriptase (50 U µL⁻¹, Roche)
- 5 x Expand reverse transcriptase buffer (Roche)
- 0.1 M DTT (Roche)
- dNTP mix (dATP, dCTP, dGTP, dTTP, 10 mM Roche)
- RNase inhibitor (40 U µL⁻¹, Roche)
- Oligo d(T)₁₅ (8 mmol., 40 µg, Roche)

The first strand of complimentary DNA (cDNA) was synthesized using expand reverse transcriptase. Total RNA (5 µg; section 2.2.2.1) was adjusted to a final volume of 10 µL (with DEPC treated water if necessary), denatured with 1 µL of Oligo d(T)₁₅ at 70 °C for 10 min, and then immediately quenched on ice. After a brief centrifugal pulse at 4 °C to collect the contents, the tubes were placed back on ice, and the following reagents added: 4 µL of 5 x expand reverse transcriptase buffer, 2 µL of DTT, 2 µL of dNTP mix and 0.5 µL of RNase inhibitor. The contents were then gently mixed and pulse centrifuged briefly before incubating at 42 °C for 2 min, after which 1 µL of expand reverse transcriptase was added (mixed and pulse spun). The mixture was then incubated for 1 h at 42 °C. The cDNA was placed on ice to stop the reaction and used immediately for PCR amplification (section 2.2.3.2), or stored at -20 °C until required.

2.2.3.2 Amplification of cDNA by Polymerase Chain Reaction

Reagents:
- PCR master mix: Taq DNA polymerase, dNTPs, MgCl₂ and reaction buffers (Promega)
- Primers (forward and reverse)

Each primer (Sigma) was dissolved in sterile water to give a concentration of 100 µM and stored at -20 °C until required. A working stock was prepared by diluting to a concentration of 10 µM. In a 50 µL volume of PCR mixture, 2 µL of primer was used, giving a final concentration of 400 nM (for primer sequences and names refer to Figure 2.2 and Table 2.2).
**ACOF1**: First round forward primer (Shifted by 3 nucleotides in 5’ direction for E101)

```
5’ GT GAATTC GAY GCN TGY SAN AAY TGG GG 3’
```

**EcoRI**

```
2 4 2 2 4 2
```

Degeneracy = 256 x

**ECORI**: First round reverse primer (Shifted by 12 nucleotides in 3’ direction for E102)

```
5’ TCG TCTAGA TC RAA NCK MGG YTC YTT 3’
```

**XbaI**

```
2 4 2 2 2 2
```

Degeneracy = 128 x

**E101**: Second round forward primer

```
5’ GTGAATTC GCN TGY GAR AAY TGG GGH TT 3’
```

**EcoRI**

```
4 2 2 2 3
```

Degeneracy = 96 x

**E102**: Second round reverse primer

```
5’ TCG TCTAGA GYT CYT TNG CYT GRA AYT T 3’
```

**XbaI**

```
2 2 4 2 2 2
```

Degeneracy = 256 x

---

**Figure 2.2**: Sequence of the Primers used in RT-PCR to Amplify Putative ACC Oxidase Sequences.

With the advent of the T-vector system (section 2.2.4.5) the restriction enzyme sites *EcoRI* and *XbaI* are no longer necessary.

Degeneracy: M=A+C; K=T+G; R=A+G; S=C+G; W=A+T; Y=C+T; B=T+C+G; D=A+T+G; H=A+T+C; V=A+C+G; N=A+T+C+G;
Table 2.2: Primers used in this study.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Oligo Name</th>
<th>Primer Sequence (5’ – 3’)</th>
<th>TM</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AppleACO F</td>
<td>GAC GAC CC GAA TTC C ATG GCG ACT TCC CAG TTG</td>
<td>83.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AppleACO R</td>
<td>GAC GAC GCT GAC TCA GGC AGT TGC AAC AGG</td>
<td>81.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ORFMD2F</td>
<td>GAC GAC GAA TTC ATG GCA ACT TCC</td>
<td>71.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ORFMD2R</td>
<td>GAC GAC GCT GAC TCA CTA ATT TTG ATT TCT TCT TCT GTT C</td>
<td>68.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ORMD3F</td>
<td>GAC GAC GGA TTC ATG GAG AAC TCC C</td>
<td>73.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>APEST/R</td>
<td>GAC GAC CTC GAG TCA AGC AGT ACT TAT AAC TGG ACC</td>
<td>75.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pProEx-1(MD1F)</td>
<td>GAC GAC CAT ATG GCG ACT TCC CCA GTT GTT G</td>
<td>78.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pProEx-1(MD1R)</td>
<td>GAC GAC CTC GAG TCA GGC AGT TGC AAC AGG</td>
<td>80.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pProEx-1(MD2F)</td>
<td>GAC GAC CAT ATG GCA ACT TCC CCA GTT GTT G</td>
<td>76.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pProEx-1(MD2R)</td>
<td>GAC GAC CTC GAG TCA ATT TTG ATT TCT TCT TCT GTT C</td>
<td>73.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pProEx-1(MD3F)</td>
<td>GAC GAC CAT ATG GAG AAC TCC CCA GTT ATC AAC C</td>
<td>75.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Degen.Malus/F</td>
<td>GAY TAC ATG AAG CT$S$ TAY KCT GG</td>
<td>58.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F/MD-AC02</td>
<td>GGA ACC CGA CAA AAA G</td>
<td>56.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Degen.F.South</td>
<td>GAW GAK TAC AGG AA$K$ RYS ATG AAG</td>
<td>57.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Md1(rtpcr)intron2/F</td>
<td>GAA GAG TAC AGG AAG ACC ATG AAG</td>
<td>61.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Md2(rtpcr)intron2/F</td>
<td>GAA GAT TAC AGG AAG ACC ATG AAG</td>
<td>61.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Table 2.2 contd.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------------</td>
<td>------------------</td>
<td>------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Md3(rtpcr)intron2/F</td>
<td>GAT GAG TAC AGG AAT GTG ATG AAG</td>
<td>61.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Md1 3' - UTR</td>
<td>TTG TTG AGC AAA CAT TTG</td>
<td>58.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Md2 3' - UTR</td>
<td>CTA ATA ATT TTT ATT TTA TAG ATT TCA AC</td>
<td>57.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Md3 3' - UTR</td>
<td>CAC ATT GGT TAC TTT CTA CAA CG</td>
<td>60.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pGEX Forward</td>
<td>GGG CTG GCA AGC CAC GTT TGT G</td>
<td>78.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pGEX Reverse</td>
<td>CCG GGA GCT GCA TGT GTC AGG G</td>
<td>80.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M13 Forward</td>
<td>CCC AGT CAC GAC GTT GTA AAA CG</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M13 Reverse</td>
<td>AGC GGA TAA CAA TTT CAC ACA GG</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Actin Forward</td>
<td>GCG AAT TCT TCA CCA CYA CHG CYG ARc G</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Actin Reverse</td>
<td>GCG GAT CCC CRA TCC ARa CAC TGT AYT TTC C</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The PCR conditions were optimized and the appropriate parameters were set on either the PTC 200 Peltier Thermal Cycler, PCR Express Thermohybaid (PCY1040) or a Sprint Hybaid. For example, the number of cycles selected (typically 20 to 35 in this thesis) determined the amount of DNA amplified. The annealing temperature was typically set 5 °C below the melting temperature ($T_m$) of the primers, and the length of the DNA to be amplified determined the extension time needed for complete synthesis of the PCR product. As a rule of thumb, approximately 2 min extension time was allowed per kb of DNA.

Typically, the first round PCR used 5 μL of the cDNA (synthesized as described section 2.2.3.1) mixed with 25 μL of PCR mastermix, 2 μL of each primer (forward and reverse refer to Figure 2.2 and Table 2.2), and then made up to a final volume of 50 μL with nuclease free water. For the second round PCR reaction 5 μL of the first round PCR products were used as template together with a second set of primers (forward and reverse refer to Figure 2.2 and Table 2.2). All other components in the reaction were the same as for the first PCR round.

As an example, for the amplification of ACO fragments of an estimated length of 850 bp from an appropriate first strand cDNA solution using universal degenerate primers (ECOFl and ECORI; Figure 2.2), the PCR machines were programmed for the first round PCR reaction as follows. One cycle at 94 °C for 2 min; 35 cycles at 94 °C for 30 s (denaturation), 42 °C for 30 s (annealing), and 72 °C for 1 min 15 s (extension for 850 bp); with a final incubation step at 72 °C for 5 min to complete the extension of the cDNAs, before holding at 4 °C. For the second round PCR reaction the same parameters were used except the annealing temperature was increased from 42 °C to 50 °C and the second set of universal degenerated and nested primers were used (E101 and E102; Figure 2.2).

### 2.2.3.3 Primers Used for In-Frame Cloning

The Amersham pGEX-6P-3 (Figure 2.3) and the Gibco-BRL pPRoEX™-1 (Figure 2.4) protein expression systems were used to over-express the genes of interest within the background of *E. coli*. This requires that the foreign DNA be inserted into the plasmid vector in the correct orientation to allow transcription of an RNA that can be translated into the protein of interest. Primers were designed (Table 2.2) in such a way that the sequences generated by PCR contained different restriction sites at their 5’ and 3’ ends. These two restriction sites could then be used to directionally clone the PCR product, in-frame, into the multiple cloning site (MCS) of the expression vector. Spacer nucleotides were sometimes added between the restriction site and the coding frame to ensure that the first three nucleotides following those encoding the N-terminal extension
Materials and Methods

Figure 2.3: The Map and Schematic Diagram of the pGEX-6P-3 Vector and the Vector Multiple Cloning Site.

The EcoRI and SalI sites used for inserting MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2, and BamHI and XhoI sites used for inserting MD-ACO3 open reading frame (ORF) sequences in-frame into the multiple cloning site (MCS) of pGEX are highlighted. The primers used for directional cloning into these sites appear in Table 2.2. Also indicated is the PreScission™ protease cleavage site from where the recombinant MD-ACO can be released from fusion with glutathione S-transferase.
Materials and Methods

Figure 2.4: The Map and Schematic Diagram of the pProEX-1 Vector and the Vector Multiple Cloning Site.

The NdeI and XhoI sites used for inserting MD-AC01, MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 open reading frame (ORF) sequences in-frame into the multiple cloning site (MCS) of pProEX-1 are highlighted. The primers used for directionally cloning into these sites appear in Table 2.2. Also indicated are the N-terminal six histidine residues that become fused to the translated sequences and hence allow purification of the fusion proteins by metal chelate affinity chromatography. The figure was reproduced from Focus 16 (4).
(of the protein of interest) coded for methionine set by the vector. At least six additional nucleotides were added to cap the restriction sites to allow the restrict enzymes to cut more effectively. Primers were designed to generate probes necessary for Southern blot analysis (Table 2.2), and primers were also designed to generate fragments for cDNA Southern analysis (Table 2.2).

2.2.3.4 Relative Quantitative RT-PCR using QuantumRNA™ 18S Internal Standards

Reagents:
- Expand reverse transcriptase (50 U µL⁻¹, Roche)
- 5 x Expand reverse transcriptase buffer (Roche)
- 0.1 M DTT (Roche)
- dNTP mix (dATP, dCTP, dGTP, dTTP, 10 mM Roche)
- RNase inhibitor (40 U µL⁻¹, Roche)
- 50 µM Random primers (Ambion)
- 18S rRNA primers: competimers (Ambion)
- 10 µM primers (Table 2.2)

Relative RT-PCR is a method for the quantitative analysis of gene expression. The assumption is that equal amounts of RNA from multiple samples, using identical PCR conditions and amplifying the same target from each sample, will result in the amount of PCR product from each reaction that is proportional to the abundance of RNA transcript in the samples. Since the expression of 18S ribosomal RNA (rRNA) is constitutively expressed (although even rRNA levels are not invariablty), it makes an ideal internal control for RNA analysis. By using QuantumRNA™ 18S Internal Standards (Ambion), with competimers, which are specially modified primers that cannot be extended, the signal for 18S rRNA can be attenuated to the level of a rare message by modulating the efficiency of the amplification of the 18S primers. A debate about using a relative quantitative RT-PCR technique to successfully demonstrate levels of specific transcripts verses conventional northern blotting is ongoing (Hengen, 1995), with some supporters finding the RT-PCR method both more valid and reliable than northern analysis (Jaakola et al., 2001).

Reverse transcription of RNA was carried out using total RNA (5 µg) and random primers (2 µL from a 50 µM solution) in a total volume of 10 µL, the mixture incubated for 3 min at 70 °C, quenched on ice for 2 min and collected by a brief pulse centrifugation at 4 °C. On ice, 4 µL of 5 x expand reverse transcriptase buffer, 2 µL of DTT, 2 µL of dNTP mix and 0.5 µL of RNase...
inhibitor were added, the contents mixed and pulse centrifuged briefly before incubating at 42 °C for 2 min. After which, 1 μL of expand reverse transcriptase was added (mixed and pulse spun), and the reaction mix incubated for 1 h at 42 °C.

For PCR each reaction contained 2 μL of each ACO primer (forward and reverse), 4 μL of a 1:4 ratio of 18S rRNA primers to competimers mix, in 0.5 volumes of mastermix and the mixture was then made up to a total volume of 45 μL with nuclease free water. In fact, a cocktail was made up and well mixed to reduce pipetting variation and then 45 μL of the cocktail was transferred to each of the PCR tubes before 5 μL of cDNA was added and the contents mixed. The PCR parameters were the same as described earlier except the annealing temperature was raised to 55 °C.

β-actin primers (Table 2.2) were used, in the absence of non quantitative analysis, to determine whether cDNA had been generated following an RT reaction, especially where no bands occurred using primers to amplify fragments of the gene of interest.

2.2.4 Cloning of PCR Products into Plasmid Vectors

2.2.4.1 Ethanol Precipitation of DNA or RNA

Ethanol precipitation was used to concentrate nucleic acids by precipitating them out of solution and then resuspending them in the required volume. It was also used to partially purify DNA and RNA from salt solutions.

Reagents
- Sodium acetate
- Ethanol
- Isopropanol

Nucleic acid was precipitated from solution by adding a 0.1 volume of 3 M sodium acetate (pH 5.6), and either 2.5 volumes (for DNA) or 3 volumes (for RNA) of ice-cold ethanol (99.7-100 % v/v). DNA was precipitated at -20 °C for 3 h or 4 °C overnight (for maximum yield) and RNA was precipitated at -80 °C for 1 h or -20 °C overnight (for maximum yield). The nucleic acid was then pelleted by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 20 min (DNA) or 30 min (RNA) at 4 °C and the supernatant discarded. After rinsing the pellet with ice-cold ethanol (75% v/v) to remove residual salts and discarding the supernatant, any residual ethanol was collected by pulse-centrifugation and removed with a micropipette. The pellet was air-dried (~ 5 min) and resuspended in sterile water (DNA) or DEPC treated water (RNA).
In some circumstances when volume quantities were limiting, 0.8 to one volume of isopropanol was added rather than ethanol and sodium acetate. However, ethanol was preferred as isopropanol is less volatile and tends to co-precipitate solutes, for example, NaCl, which can inhibit re-dissolution of the nucleic acid pellet.

### 2.2.4.2 Quantification of DNA

DNA concentrations were determined by measuring the absorbance of each solution at 260 nm ($A_{260}$) and 280 nm ($A_{280}$) using an Ultrospec 3000 UV/visible spectrophotometer (Pharmacia Biotech). Samples were diluted appropriately and aliquots of 100 μL transferred to a slightly larger quartz cuvette and measured against a water blank. For DNA, an $OD_{260}$ of 1.0 corresponds to approximately 50 μg mL$^{-1}$ of double stranded DNA (Sambrook et al., 1989). The DNA concentration was calculated using the following formula:

$$A_{260\text{nm}} \times \text{dilution factor} \times 50 = \text{DNA concentration in μg mL}^{-1}$$

The purity of the DNA was determined by measuring the $A_{260\text{nm}} / A_{280\text{nm}}$ ratio. Relatively pure DNA solutions have an $A_{260\text{nm}} / A_{280\text{nm}}$ ratio of 1.8 (Sambrook et al., 1989), a value that decreases with the presence of contaminants such as proteins, phenol and surfactants (if these are used in the nucleic acid procedures).

Relatively pure DNA solutions have $A_{260\text{nm}} / A_{230\text{nm}}$ ratio > 2, a value that decreases with the presence of polysaccharides (Dong and Dunstan, 1996).

When sample volumes were limiting a NanoDrop® ND-1000 spectrophotometer (NanoDrop Technologies) was also used to measure the absorbance of each solution at 260 nm ($A_{260}$) and 280 nm ($A_{280}$), samples were diluted appropriately and aliquots of 2 μL were measured against a water blank.

For cloning procedures, cDNA and plasmid vector concentrations were also estimated using a High Mass Ladder or a Low Mass Ladder (Gibco BRL), where DNA samples of known concentration were run along side the unknown sample by agarose gel electrophoresis.

### 2.2.4.3 Agarose Gel Electrophoresis of DNA

**Reagents:**
- UltraPURE™ agarose (Gibco BRL)
- 10 x TAE buffer: 0.4 M Tris, 0.2 M glacial acetic acid, 10 mM EDTA pH 8
Materials and Methods

- 10 x SUDS: 0.1 M EDTA pH 8, 50% (v/v) glycerol, 1% (w/v) SDS, 0.025% (w/v) bromophenol blue
- Ethidium bromide (10 mg mL⁻¹)

Agarose gel electrophoresis is used to separate DNA fragments by size for either identification or purification. In solution (pH 8) DNA molecules are negatively charged and will migrate towards the positive electrode when an electrical current is applied. Migration is dependent on the size of the DNA fragments and their conformation both of which affect the movement of fragments in the agarose matrix. Agarose gels (0.6% to 1.2%) were prepared by dissolving agarose in 1 x TAE buffer by heating, allowing the solution to cool to approximately 55 °C before pouring the solution into gel-forming apparatus. For general applications, a horizontal DNA Mini Sub Cell™ (70 cm² gel bed, Bio-Rad) was normally used, but for Southern blot analysis a horizontal DNA Sub Cell™ (225 cm² gel bed, Bio-Rad) was used. DNA samples, including molecular size markers at ca. 0.1 µg per mm of lane width (1 Kb Plus DNA ladder, Invitrogen), were mixed with 0.1 volumes of 10 x SUDS, loaded into the pre-formed wells and separated by electrophoresis at 25 to 100 V. After electrophoresis, gels were stained with 0.1 µg mL⁻¹ ethidium bromide for 10 to 20 min, and often destained (with water) for a further 20 to 30 min. The DNA fragments were visualized on a short wave UV (340 nm) Transilluminator (UVP Inc., San Gabriel, CA, USA), and photographed digitally with an Alpha Imager™ 2000 Documentation and Analysis System (Alpha Innotech Corporation, San Leandro, CA, USA), or Gel Doc 2000™ (Bio-Rad).

2.2.4.4 DNA Recovery from Agarose Gels

DNA fragments were isolated from agarose gels using a spin column method with the CONCERT™ Gel Extraction Systems (Gibco BRL).

Reagents:
- CONCERT™ Gel Extraction Systems (Gibco BRL)(most concentrations not included)
- Gel Solubilizing Buffer: Sodium perchlorate, sodium acetate and TBE-solubilizer
- Wash Buffer: NaCl, EDTA and Tris-HCl (need to add ~100% ethanol)
- TE Buffer: 10 mM Tris-HCl (pH 8), 0.1 mM EDTA
- Spin cartridges, Wash tubes, Recovery tubes and Silica resin

After agarose electrophoresis, DNA fragments of interest were excised under long-wave UV light (340 nm) using a sterile scalpel blade, placed in a microcentrifuge tube, weighed (≤ 40 mg), and solubilization buffer (30 µL) added. The mixture was then incubated at 50 °C for 15 min, with shaking every 3 min for 10 s, and once the gel had dissolved, the sample was
incubated for a further 5 min. The mixture was transferred to a cartridge contained in a 2 mL Wash tube, centrifuged at 12,000 x g for 1 min, the flow-through solution discarded and solubilization buffer (500 μL) again added. After incubation at room temperature for 1 min, the DNA was washed by centrifugation at 12,000 x g for 1 min, the flow-through discarded, Wash buffer (700 μL) added and the cartridge incubated at room temperature for 5 min. Following centrifugation at 12,000 x g for 1 min, the flow-through was discarded and residual ethanol removed by centrifugation at 12,000 x g for 1 min. The cartridge was transferred into a Recovery tube, and pre-warmed TE buffer (65 °C to 70 °C; 50 μL) was applied directly to the centre of the cartridge, the tube incubated for 1 min at room temperature, and then centrifuged at 12,000 x g for 2 min to collect the DNA.

2.2.4.5 DNA ligation

DNA ligation using the linearised T-vector system

The DNA fragments produced by PCR have a single deoxyadenosine attached at the 3'-ends of the duplex molecule generated by the terminal transferase activity of Taq DNA polymerase (sticky ends), which is complementary to the overhanging 3'-terminal deoxythymidines on the pGEM®-T Easy Vector developed by Promega (Figures 2.5 and 2.6).

The amount of PCR product required for ligation was determined by a 3:1 insert:vector molar ratio, calculated using the following formula:

\[
\frac{\text{vector (ng)}}{\text{size of vector (Kb)}} \times \frac{\text{insert (Kb)}}{3} = \frac{\text{insert/PCR product (X ng)}}{1}
\]

The PCR product was ligated with 50 ng of pGEM®-T Easy Vector in a reaction mix containing 5 μL of 2 x T4 DNA ligase buffer and 1 μL of T4 DNA ligase (3 Weiss units μL⁻¹), in a final reaction volume of 10 μL made up with sterile water. After mixing by pipetting, the ligation reaction was incubated at 4 °C overnight.

DNA ligation using restriction digested vector

For ligations into either the pGEX-6P-3 Vector (Figure 2.3)(Amersham, Pharmacia Biotech) or the pPROEX™-1 Vector (Figure 2.4) (GibcoBRL, Life Technologies), a 1:3 molar ratio of vector to insert was also used. The quantity of vector and PCR product was estimated visually by resolving an aliquot of plasmid and PCR product on the same 1% (w/v) agarose gel together with either a High Mass Ladder or a Low Mass Ladder (Gibco BRL), of known concentration and estimating the concentration from the ethidium bromide staining intensities.
**Figure 2.5: pGEM®-T Easy Vector Circle Map and Sequence Reference Points**

**pGEM®-T Easy Vector Sequence reference points:**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference Point</th>
<th>Base Pair</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>T7 RNA Polymerase transcription initiation site</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SP6 RNA Polymerase transcription initiation site</td>
<td>141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T7 RNA Polymerase promoter (-17 to +3)</td>
<td>2999-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SP6 RNA Polymerase promoter (-17 to +3)</td>
<td>139-158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>multiple cloning region</td>
<td>10-128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/lacZ start codon</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/lac operon sequences</td>
<td>2836-2996, 166-395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lac operator</td>
<td>200-216</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β-lactamase coding region</td>
<td>1337-2197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>phage ft region</td>
<td>2380-2835</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>binding site of pUC/M13 Forward Sequencing Primer</td>
<td>2956-2972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>binding site of pUC/M13 Reverse Sequencing Primer</td>
<td>176-192</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Figure 2.6 Sequence of the Promoter and Multiple Cloning Site of the pGEM®-T Easy Vector

The top strand of the sequence shown corresponds to the RNA synthesized by T7 RNA Polymerase. The bottom strand corresponds to the RNA synthesized by SP6 RNA Polymerase (from Promega, 1999).

The appropriate amount of PCR product was ligated with 10 to 50 ng of vector in a reaction mix that contained 2 µL of T4 DNA ligase (1 U µL⁻¹, Roche) and 2 µL of 10 x ligation buffer (supplied with ligase), made up to 20 µL with sterile water. The ligation mix was incubated overnight at 16 °C in a PTC-200 Peltier Thermal Cycler (MJ Research Inc., Watertown, Massachusetts, 02172 USA).

2.2.4.6 Transformation of E. coli using the Heat Shock Method

Reagents:
- LB broth (refer section 2.2.1.1)
- X-Gal (50 mg mL⁻¹, dissolved in N,N'-dimethylformamide)

Aliquots of competent cells (section 2.2.1.2) were thawed on ice for 5 min, then 50 to 150 µL added to the ligation reaction (section 2.2.4.5), the suspension mixed by gently pipetting up and down (while remaining on ice) and then the mixture was incubated on ice for 20 min. After this time, the cells were heat-shocked at exactly 42 °C for 45 to 50 s, quenched on ice for 2 min, then 950 µL of LB broth (room temperature) was added, and the transformation mixture incubated at 37 °C for 90 min with shaking at 180 rpm. LB Amp¹⁰⁰ plates (section 2.2.1.1) were
spread with 20 µL of X-Gal (50 mg mL\(^{-1}\)) and allowed to dry for 30 min at 37 °C prior to use. A 200 µL aliquot of the mix was then spread onto an LB Amp\(^{100}\) plate while the cells in the remaining mix were centrifuged at 3 000 x g for 1 min. Most of the supernatant was discarded and the cells resuspended in the drainings and a further 200 µL aliquot was spread onto another LB Amp\(^{100}\) plate. The plates were incubated at 37 °C overnight and then stored at 4 °C. Lac operon blue/white colony selection was used to identify transformants.

2.2.5 Characterization and Sequencing of Cloned DNA in E. Coli

2.2.5.1 Isolation of Plasmids from E. coli by the Alkaline Lysis Method

The quick DNA plasmid miniprep method of Sambrook et al., (1989) was used.

**Reagents:**

- Isopropanol
- Ethanol
- Resuspension solution-A: 25 mM Tris pH 8.0 (HCl), 50 mM glucose, 10 mM EDTA
- Alkaline lysis solution-B: 0.2 M NaOH, 1% (w/v) SDS
- Neutralization solution-C: 3 M potassium acetate, 2 M glacial acetic acid

After incubating the transformant mix (refer section 2.2.4.6) on LB Amp\(^{100}\) plates overnight at 37 °C, cells from single colonies of interest were collected using sterile toothpicks and grown separately in LB broth (10 mL) and ampicillin (100 µg mL\(^{-1}\)) overnight at 37 °C with shaking (200 rpm). E. coli broths were transferred to microcentrifuge tubes and pelleted by centrifugation at 3 000 x g for 5 min at room temperature, and the supernatant discarded. After resuspending the pellet in freshly prepared solution-A (100 µL), the cells were lysed by adding freshly prepared solution-B (200 µL) and gently mixed by slow inversion, then incubated on ice for 10 min. Neutralisation solution-C (150 µL) was added to the mixture, shaken or vortexed vigorously and then left on ice for 15 min to allow chromosomal DNA and proteins to precipitate. The precipitate was then pelleted by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 5 min at room temperature and the supernatant (~ 380 µL) transferred to a fresh tube, carefully avoiding particulate matter. For a cleaner plasmid preparation, an equal volume of chloroform: isoamyl alcohol (24:1) was added to the supernatant (~ 380 µL), the aqueous and organic phases mixed by vortexing and separated by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 5 min at room temperature, after which the upper aqueous phase (containing the plasmid DNA) was removed. The plasmid DNA was then precipitated by the addition of an equal volume of ice-cold isopropanol, the DNA pelleted by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 5 min at room temperature and the pellet rinsed twice with ice-cold ethanol 70% (v/v), air dried for 5 min, dissolved in sterile water (40µL) and stored at -20 °C.
2.2.5.2 Plasmid Isolation from *E. coli* by the Rapid Boiling Method

A very quick DNA plasmid miniprep developed by Holmes and Quigley (1981) was used.

**Reagents:**
- RNase (Sigma)
- Lysozyme (Sigma)
- 3 M Sodium acetate
- Isopropanol
- Ethanol
- 10 mM Tris-HCl (pH 8.5)
- STET buffer: 8 % (w/v) Sucrose, 0.5 % (w/v) Triton X-100, 50 mM EDTA, pH 8, 10 mM Tris, pH 8
- Lysozyme solution: 10 mg mL\(^{-1}\) in 10 mM Tris-HCl pH 7.5
- RNase A: (10 mg mL\(^{-1}\)) pre-boiled for 15 min and stored at -20 °C

After incubating the transformant mix (refer section 2.2.4.6) on LB Amp\(^{100}\) plates overnight at 37 °C, cells from single colonies of interest were collected using sterile toothpicks and grown separately in LB broth (10 mL) and ampicillin (100 µg mL\(^{-1}\)) overnight at 37 °C with shaking (200 rpm). Following centrifugation at 3 000 x g to collect the cells, the supernatant was drained off and the cell pellet resuspended in STET buffer (350 µL), lysozyme solution (25 µL) added and the suspension, incubated at 37 °C for 15 min. The mixture was then boiled for 1 min and the cell debris removed by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 10 min (the gelatinous pellet was removed with a toothpick). Plasmid DNA was precipitated by adding ice-cold isopropanol (400 µL) and 3 M sodium acetate (40 µL), mixing well and incubation at -20 °C for 10 to 20 min before collecting the DNA by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 10 min. The supernatant was removed and the pellet rinsed in 70% ethanol before centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 2 min. The supernatant was removed and the pellet air-dried for 5 min, resuspended in 10 mM Tris-HCl (pH 8.5), and stored at -20 °C until required.

2.2.5.3 Digestion of DNA with Endonuclease Restriction Enzymes

**Reagents:**
- Restriction enzyme (Roche or Gibco BRL, Life Technologies)
- 10 x Restriction buffer
- RNase A (10 mg µL\(^{-1}\))(Sigma)
- 10 x SUDS: 0.1 M EDTA pH 8, 50% (v/v) glycerol, 1% (w/v) SDS, 0.025% (w/v) bromophenol blue
Digestion of both the plasmid vector and the PCR product in preparation for directional cloning required the use of two different restriction enzymes. The isolated plasmid (section 2.2.5.1 or 2.2.5.4) was digested with 40 U of the first restriction enzyme, in 0.1 volume of 10 x restriction buffer, 20 μg of RNase A and sterile water added to 40 μL and incubation overnight at 37 °C. Samples of both digested and undigested DNA plasmid were separated by agarose gel electrophoresis (section 2.2.4.3) to ascertain whether the enzyme had cut to completion (as determined by a wholly linear plasmid). The second restriction enzyme was then added, together with sterile water if the glycerol concentration exceeded 5% (v/v), and the reaction incubated overnight at 37 °C. If the optimal buffer used for the digestion was not common to both enzymes, then an ethanol precipitation (2.2.4.1) was necessary prior to digestion of the DNA with the second restriction enzyme. The double digested plasmid was then gel (section 2.2.4.3) and column (section 2.2.5.4) purified.

The PCR generated DNA was typically cleaned (section 2.2.5.5) prior to digestion in a reaction mix containing 80 U of the first restriction enzyme, 0.1 volume of 10 x restriction buffer and sterile water added to a final volume of 80 μL. After incubation at 37 °C overnight, the second restriction enzyme was added, together with sterile water if the glycerol concentration exceeded 5% (v/v), and the reaction incubated overnight at 37 °C. Again, if the optimal buffer used for the digestion was not common to both enzymes, the PCR products were column cleaned (2.2.5.5) prior to the second restriction digestion. The double digested PCR products were then gel (section 2.2.4.4) and column (section 2.2.5.5) purified.

To confirm the presence of an insert in a plasmid vector of the expected size, 1 to 2 μg of isolated plasmid DNA (section 2.2.5.1 or 2.2.5.2) was digested in a reaction mix containing 5 U of restriction enzyme, 0.1 volumes of 10 x restriction buffer, 10 μg RNase A with sterile water added to 10 μL, at 37 °C for 1 to 3 h. The reaction was stopped with the addition of 0.1 volumes of 10 x SUDS and then the digested DNA was resolved by electrophoresis (section 2.2.4.3). If excision of the insert required the action of two restriction enzymes, and both were able to cut effectively in a common buffer, then digestion was performed in a single reaction volume.

### 2.2.5.4 Purification of Plasmid DNA for Sequencing

**Reagents:**
- QIAprep® Spin Miniprep Kit (Qiagen Inc.)

*E. coli* cells, containing a plasmid ligated to a DNA sequence of interest, were collected from culture by centrifugation at 3 000 x g for 3 min at room temperature, the supernatant discarded
and the pellet resuspended in 250 μL of buffer P1 (containing RNase, supplied by the manufacturer), before buffer P2 (250 μL) was added to lyse the cells by gently inverting the tube 4-6 times to mix. After no longer than 5 min, 350 μL of buffer N3 (high salt) was added to stop the reaction, and the tubes were inverted immediately but gently 4-6 times to precipitate contaminating chromosomal DNA and protein. The precipitate was pelleted by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 10 min at room temperature, the supernatant transferred to a QIAprep column containing a silica gel membrane and after centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 1 min the flow through was discarded, and the DNA washed by adding 0.750 μL of buffer PE. After centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 1 min, the flow through was discarded, and the centrifugation was repeated to remove any residual wash buffer. The column was then transferred to a clean microcentrifuge collection tube and the DNA eluted by adding 50 μL of buffer EB (low salt) to the centre of the column and again centrifuging for 1 min at 20 800 x g. The plasmid DNA was separated on a 1% (w/v) agarose gel (section 2.2.4.3) to assess the quantity (section 2.2.4.2) and quality and then used immediately or stored at -20 °C until required.

2.2.5.5 Purification of PCR Products

Method I.

Reagents:
- Shrimp alkaline phosphatase (SAP), and SAP buffer (Roche)
- Endonuclease III (Exo III) (USB Corp., OH, USA)

PCR products to be sequenced were cleaned up to remove any RNA and primers before they were subjected to the PCR Big Dye Terminator reaction, by adding 2 μL of SAP(1 U μL⁻¹), 1 μL of SAP buffer and 1 μL of ExoIII (10 U μL⁻¹) to an 0.5 volume of the PCR products (25 μL). The mixture was incubated at 37 °C for 30 min, and the SAP inactivated by incubation at 80 °C for 15 min. The PCR templates were then separated on a 1.2 % (w/v) agarose gel (section 2.2.4.3) to assess the quantity (section 2.2.4.2) and quality and then used immediately or stored at -20 °C until required.

Method II.

Reagents:
- High Pure PCR Product Purification Kit (Roche)

Following PCR amplification, the total volume for each tube was adjusted to 100 μL and 500 μL of Binding buffer added and the products mixed well. The contents were then transferred to a filter tube and centrifuged at 20 800 x g for 1 min at room temperature, the flow through
discarded and 500 µL of Wash buffer added. After centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 1 min at room temperature, the flow through was discarded and the wash step was repeated using 200 µL of Wash buffer. After centrifugation, the filter tube was transferred to a clean microfuge tube, 50–100 µL of Elution buffer added and the PCR products collected by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 1 min. The eluate was then centrifuged at 20 800 x g for 1 min to remove any residual glass fibres (a procedure recommended by the manufacturer), and the supernatant carefully removed. The PCR templates were then separated on a 1.2 % (w/v) agarose gel (section 2.2.4.3) to assess the quantity (section 2.2.4.2) and quality and then used immediately or stored at -20 °C until required.

2.2.5.6 Preparation for Automated Sequencing of DNA

Using the dideoxy method of DNA sequencing, the last nucleotide is always a dideoxy nucleotide. A dideoxy nucleotide is a nucleotide with a fluorescent dye attached and is known commercially as the Big Dye Terminator. The incorporation of a dideoxy nucleotide into the extension product terminates the chain and the reaction mixture contains DNA sequences of different lengths. A laser scanner on the ABI Prism automatic sequencer excites the fluorescent tag as it passes by and a detector analyzes the colour of the resulting emitted light.

Reagents:
- ABI PRISM™ Big Dye Terminator Cycle Sequencing Ready Reaction Kit (Version 3.1, Applied Biosystems)

For sequencing, the PCR assay contained DNA template (plasmid 300 ng or PCR product calculated as 2 ng for every 100 bp), 5 µL of sequencing buffer, 3.2 pmol of the appropriate primer, and 2 µL of Big Dye terminator (which contains AmpliTaq DNA Polymerase and all the required components for the sequencing reaction). The mixture was then made up to a total volume of 20 µL with sterile water, and the PCR tube containing the mixture was placed into a Peltier Thermal Cycler (MJ Research Inc.) and a one step reaction was programmed as follows: 25 cycles set at 96 °C for 10 s, then rapid thermal ramp (1 °C s⁻¹) to 50 °C, held at 50 °C for 5 s followed by rapid thermal ramp (1 °C s⁻¹) to 60 °C, held a 60 °C for 1 min 30 s. After 25 cycles, the reaction was ended and the DNA was cleaned and precipitated by the addition of 2 µL EDTA (125 mM), 2 µL of sodium acetate (3 M) and 50 µL of 100% (v/v) ethanol. After mixing well by inversion, the sample was incubated at room temperature for 15 min, and the DNA pelleted by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 30 min at 4 °C, washed twice with 70% (v/v) ethanol (70 µL) and air dried.
Samples were submitted to Lorraine Berry at the Genomic Centre, Allan Wilson Centre, Massey University, and the fragments were analyzed using standard protocols with an automated ABI PRISM™ 3730 DNA Capillary Sequencer (Applied Biosystems). Universal M13 forward and reverse primers (Table 2.2) were used for the automated sequencing from the pGEM®-T Easy Vector (New England Biolab). The M13 reverse primer could be used to sequence from pPROEX™-1. The pGEX gene specific primers (Amersham catalogue; refer Table 2.2) were ordered from Sigma.

2.2.6 DNA Sequence Analysis

2.2.6.1 Sequence Alignment

A BLAST search of the GenBank database was used to search for nucleic acid sequences and then the sequences of interest were stored within the Gene Computer Group (GCG version 11.0) Fasta programmes (Accelnys Inc., San Diego, CA, USA), and used as a reference against which future sequences were compared. The electrophoretograms were edited to check whether any differences were real or caused by unincorporated dye, and the vector sequence was cut out if necessary. Many of the alignment programmes compliment each other and were used in conjunction with each other. GCG programmes such as the MAP give a choice of the best amino acid sequence from three reading frames and then the predicted polypeptide amino acid sequences from the cloned cDNA coding regions were compared with the protein sequences held in the NCBI protein databases. The programme Sequencher™ 4.2 (Genes Codes Corp., Ann Arbor, MI, USA) was used to provide an overview of how the fragments fit together and their orientation (lots of sophisticated functions but only one person can use it at a time). MT Navigator 1.0.2b3 package (Applied Biosystems Inc.), was useful for editing and comparing electrophoretograms, and for moving two or more sequences until they overlap, as with forward and reverse sequences.

**Expected (E) values:** a parameter that describes the number of hits one can expect to see just by chance when searching a database of a particular size. Random background noise that exists for matches between sequences, with the numbers decreasing exponentially so that the closer to zero the more significant it is (from the NCBI database).

2.2.6.2 Sequence Phylogeny

A fifty percent majority rule consensus tree was built using a heuristic search with default parameters of a β-version of the Phylogenetic Analysis Using Parsimony (PAUP* version 4.B10, Sinauer Associates Inc. Publishers, Sunderland Massachusetts© 1998 Smithsonian Institute). To view the phylogenetic tree, the software package Split Tree 4 (Huson and Bryant,
2006) was used. To edit out and appropriately label the sequences the software programme Adobe Illustrator® 8.0, (Adobe Systems Inc., USA) was used. Non parametric bootstrap values for internal splits (Felsenstein, 1985), give an indication of the strength of the signals within the data that separate the grouping of taxa on one side of the split from taxa on the other side. Hence bootstrap reduces the potential influence of stochastic error. Non parametric means the underlying programme does not assume that the distribution curve is going to be normal.

2.2.7 Southern Analysis

2.2.7.1 Isolation of Genomic DNA

Genomic DNA was isolated by a modified method based on that of Keb-Llanes et al., (2002), including steps from the method of Junghans and Metziaff (1990).

Reagents

- SDS
- Potassium acetate
- Sodium acetate
- RNase A
- Phenol crystals
- Chloroform
- Isoamyl alcohol
- Ethanol
- Isopropanol
- Extraction buffer A: Hexadecyltrimethylammonium bromide (CTAB) 2 % (w/v), 100 mM Tris-HCl (pH 8), 20 mM EDTA, 1.4 M NaCl, Polyvinylpyrrolidone (PVP-40) 4 % (w/v), ascorbic acid 0.1 % (w/v), and 10 mM 2-mercaptoethanol.
- Extraction buffer B: 100 mM Tris-HCl (pH 8), 50 mM EDTA, 100 mM NaCl, and 10 mM 2-mercaptoethanol.
- Tris-buffered phenol: 6 mL Tris-HCl 1 M (pH 8), 7.5 mL NaOH 2 M, 130 mL H2O, and 500 g commercial phenol crystals.
- TE Buffer: 10 mM Tris, 1mM EDTA (pH 8)

Approximately 4 g FW of young leaf tissue was ground to a fine powder using a pre-chilled pestle and mortar under liquid nitrogen. The powder was transferred into a 50 mL sterile screw-capped disposable polypropylene tube and 4 mL of extraction buffer A, 12 mL of extraction buffer B and 1.3 mL of SDS 20 % (w/v) were added and the mixture vortexed for 3 min. After incubation in a water bath at 65 °C for 20 min, cold (-20 °C) 5 M potassium acetate (5.5 mL)
was added and thoroughly mixed, before the mixture was transferred to microcentrifuge tubes and the debris removed by centrifugation at 15 300 x g for 15 min at 4 °C. After 1 mL of the supernatant was transferred to a fresh tube, 540 μL of 100% isopropanol (pre cooled to -20 °C) was added, the mixture incubated on ice for 20 min before the DNA was collected by centrifugation at 9 600 x g for 10 min and the supernatant discarded. The pellet was washed with 500 μL of 70 % (v/v) ethanol (pre cooled to -20 °C), followed by centrifugation at 9 600 x g for 1 min, pulse centrifugation and then air drying for 10 min. The pellet was resuspended in TE buffer (600 μL) then 60 μL of 3 M sodium acetate (pH 5.2) and 360 μL of 100 % (v/v) isopropanol (pre cooled to -20 °C) was added, and the mixture incubated on ice for 20 min.

Again the DNA was pelleted by centrifugation at 9 600 x g for 10 min, the supernatant discarded and the pellet washed with 500 μL of 70 % (v/v) ethanol (pre-cooled to -20 °C), followed by centrifugation at 9 600 x g for 1 min, pulse centrifugation and air drying for 10 min. The pellet was resuspended in TE buffer (600 μL), followed by the addition of 60 μL of 3 M sodium acetate (pH 5.2) and 360 μL of 100% isopropanol (pre cooled to -20 °C), and the mixture was again incubated on ice for 20 min.

The DNA was again pelleted by centrifugation at 9 600 x g for 10 min, the supernatant discarded and the pellet washed with 500 μL of 70 % (v/v) ethanol (pre cooled to -20 °C), followed by centrifugation at 9 600 x g for 1 min, pulse centrifugation and air drying for 10 min. The pellet was resuspended with 400 μL of TE buffer and 4 μL of RNase A (10 mg mL⁻¹) was added and the mixture incubated at 37 °C for 20 min. Following incubation, 200 μL of Tris-buffered phenol was added and the solution shaken for 3 min, then 200 μL of chloroform: isoamyl alcohol (24:1) was added and the solution shaken for a further 3 min. The aqueous and organic phases were separated by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 10 min and the upper aqueous layer transferred to a fresh tube and the DNA precipitated with ethanol (section 2.2.4.1), resuspended and quantified (section 2.2.4.2).

2.2.7.2 Digestion of Genomic DNA

Reagents:

- **EcoRI**: 10 U μL⁻¹ (Roche)
- **HindIII**: 10 U μL⁻¹ (Roche)
- **XbaI**: 10 U μL⁻¹ (Roche)
- 10 x Restriction buffer: (supplied with the appropriate enzyme)
Genomic DNA was digested with three restriction endonucleases. In a total volume of 600 μL containing 60 μL of 10 x restriction buffer, 10 μg of DNA was digested with 100 U of either EcoRI, HindIII or XbaI at 37 °C overnight (Dr Nigel Gapper, Cornell University, USA, pers. comm.). The digested DNA was then ethanol precipitated overnight (section 2.2.4.1), and following centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 20 min, washing in ice cold 75 % (v/v) ethanol and air drying for 5 min, resuspended in TE buffer (10 μL) and left at 4 °C overnight to completely dissolve the DNA (to prevent shearing the DNA by pipetting). The resuspended digests were then pooled into appropriate tubes (thus one tube contained DNA digested with EcoRI, another contained DNA digested with HindIII and the third tube contained DNA digested with XbaI). The reason for pooling the digested DNA was so that aliquots were taken from the same digestion mixture, thereby ensuring that all of the loading samples contained equal amounts of DNA. One tenth volume of 10 x SUDS gel loading buffer was added and the DNA samples (20 μg per lane) were fractionated on a 0.8% (w/v) agarose gel by electrophoresis at 30 V (section 2.2.4.3), for 16 to 18 h until the bromophenol dye front was ca. 12 cm from the origin of the gel.

2.2.7.3 Southern Blotting of Genomic DNA

Reagents:
- Depurination solution: 0.25 M HCl
- Denaturation solution: 1.5 M NaCl, 0.4 M NaOH
- Neutralizing solution: 1.0 M Tris (pH 8), 1.5 M NaCl
- Transfer buffer: (20 x SSC) 3 M NaCl, 0.3 M sodium citrate (pH 7)

Following electrophoresis (2.2.4.3), genomic DNA fragments were transferred to a nylon membrane by Southern blotting (Southern, 1975) based on the downward capillary transfer method of Chomczynski, (1992a), except for the addition of a depurination step. The agarose gel was immersed in depurination solution with gentle shaking for 10 min, rinsed twice with RO water and transferred to the denaturation solution for 1 h on a shaker. After two rinses with RO water the gel was equilibrated in neutralising buffer for 10 min on a shaker, rinsed briefly in RO water and agitated for 15 min in transfer buffer.

To transfer the DNA (refer Figure 2.7), four pieces of dry blotting paper (3MM, Whatman) were first lined up on a 4 cm high stack of paper towels, and then a gel-sized piece of blotting paper, pre-wetted with transfer buffer, was placed onto the top of the dry blotting paper. A gel-sized piece of Hybond™-N⁺ nylon membrane (Amersham), pre-soaked in transfer buffer for 5 min, was placed on top of the wet blotting paper, and then the gel was placed face-up on top of the nylon membrane, taking care to prevent air bubbles forming (by adding a small quantity of transfer buffer to the membrane and immediately laying the gel on top). Three pieces of
Materials and Methods

2.2.7.4 Southern Blotting of cDNA Fragments

DNA fragments generated by PCR were transferred to Hybond™-N⁺ nylon membrane by the downward capillary transfer method (2.2.7.3), except the gel was not depurinated, denatured or neutralised before transfer, and the transfer time was for 5 h.
2.2.7.5 Labelling DNA for Southern Analysis with [α-32P]-dATP

Reagents:
- Megaprime™ DNA Labelling Kit (Amersham)
- [α-32P]-dATP (Amersham)
- Reaction buffer: (supplied in kit)

DNA was labelled with [α-32P]-dATP using the Megaprime™ DNA Labelling Kit (Amersham). Initially 5 μL of DNA (ca. 5 ng μL⁻¹) was combined with 5 μL of nonamer primers and denatured in a boiling water bath for 3 min. Following pulse centrifugation to collect the contents, 4 μL each of the unlabelled dNTPs (dGTP, dCTP, and dTTP) were added, together with reaction buffer (5 μL) and ‘Klenow’ polymerase (2 μL), before the final volume was adjusted to 45 μL with sterile water. The labelling reaction was initiated with 5 μL of [α-32P]-dATP (specific activity 3 000 Ci mmol⁻¹) and continued for 15 min at 37 °C. The radiolabelled DNA was then purified through a ProbeQuant™ Sephadex G-50 Micro Column (Pharmacia Biotech). This involved vortexing the column to resuspend the Sephadex, loosening the lid, snapping off the bottom closure and centrifugation of the column in a microcentrifuge tube at 735 x g for 1 min to remove the void volume. The column was transferred to a new microfuge tube and the labelled sample was layered onto the Sephadex and the labelled DNA purified away from unincorporated nucleotides, reaction dyes and salts by centrifugation at 735 x g for 2 min. Labelled DNA collected at the bottom of the microcentrifuge tube was denatured in boiling water for 2 min and then added directly to the hybridization solution (pre-equilibrated at 65 °C) bathing the membrane (2.2.7.6).

2.2.7.6 Hybridisation and Washing of DNA Blots

Reagents:
- Church hybridisation solution: 0.25 M Na₂HPO₄.H₂O (pH 7.2), 7 % (w/v) SDS, 1 % (w/v) BSA fraction V, 1 mM EDTA (pH 8).
- Hybridisation wash solution: 20 mM Na₂HPO₄.H₂O (pH 7.2), 5 % (w/v) SDS, 0.5 % (w/v) BSA fraction V, 1 mM EDTA (pH 8).
- 20 x SSPE: 0.2 M NaH₂PO₄ (pH 6.5), 3.6 M NaCl, 20 mM EDTA
- 2 x SSPE: 2 x SSPE (pH 6.5), 0.1 % (w/v) SDS
- 1 x SSPE: 1 x SSPE (pH 6.5), 0.1 % (w/v) SDS
- 0.2 x SSPE: 0.2 x SSPE (pH 6.5), 0.1 % (w/v) SDS
- 0.1 x SSPE: 0.1 x SSPE (pH 6.5), 0.1 % (w/v) SDS
The method used for labelling and washing of Hybond-N⁺ membranes was based on that of Church and Gilbert (1984). The membrane was rolled up, nucleic acid facing inwards, and placed in a Hybaid™ screw top glass tube (Hybaid Ltd., Teddington, Middlesex, UK) containing 25 mL of Church hybridization solution, and pre-incubated in a rotary oven at 65 °C for 1 to 3 h. The denatured labelled DNA probe (section 2.2.7.5) was added to the hybridization solution and the membrane was incubated at 65 °C overnight. A series of washes were then undertaken, each at 65 °C. In the first, 100 mL of hybridization wash solution was used to wash the membrane for 20 min. This was followed by a 20 min wash in 2 x SSPE, a 20 min wash in 1 x SSPE, a 20 min wash in 0.2 x SSPE, and a final wash for 1 h in 0.1 x SSPE. The membrane was then wrapped in clingfilm and the presence of radioactivity determined using either of two methods. For the first, the membrane was placed onto a FujiFilm BAB cassette, nucleic acid facing up, and covered with a FujiFilm Imaging Plate (coated with accelerated phosphorescent fluorescent material), and the imaging plate analysed using a FujiFilm Fluoro Image Analyser FLA-5000. For the second, the membrane was placed in a cassette with an X-omatic intensifying screen and a Kodak Xar-6 X-ray film, left at room temperature for a few hours or -80 °C for days/weeks and developed in an automatic X-ray film processor (100PlusTM, All-Pro Image, Hicksville, NY, USA).

2.2.7.7 Stripping Southern Blots

Reagents:
- Stripping solution: 0.1 x SSPE, 0.1 % (w/v) SDS
- 0.1 x SSPE

Nylon membranes were stripped according to the method of Memelink et al., (1994). Stripping solution was boiled for ca. 5 min and the solution poured onto the membrane and allowed to cool to room temperature. After discarding the solution, the procedure was repeated at least 4 times until the radioactive counts were low. The membrane was finally rinsed with 0.1 x SSPE to remove the SDS, sealed in a plastic bag and stored at 4 °C, until rehybridisation (section 2.2.7.6).

2.3 Expression, Purification, Analysis of Enzyme Activity and Protein Accumulation

cDNA ligated into the pGEX-6P-3 Vector or into the pPROEX-1 Vector (section 2.2.4.5) and transformed into E. coli strain DH5α or BL-21 (section 2.2.4.6) were used in this study.
2.3.1 Preliminary Induction of Recombinant Proteins

Reagents:
- Luria-Bertani broth (section 2.2.1.1)
- Isopropyl-β-D-thiogalactopyranoside (IPTG)
- Ampicillin (100 mg mL⁻¹)
- SDS-PAGE gel loading buffer (2x): 100 mM Tris-HCl, pH 6.8; 20 % (v/v) glycerol; 5 % (v/v) SDS; 0.01 % (w/v) bromophenol blue.

The ability of *E. coli* transformed with an expression vector to transcribe RNA from the cDNA insert upon treatment with IPTG, and to translate the protein of interest, needed initially to be tested on a small scale.

A single colony of *E. coli* transformed with expression vector containing the cDNA insert of interest was grown in LB broth (10 mL) and ampicillin (100 μg mL⁻¹) overnight at 37 °C with shaking (200 rpm). An aliquot of this overnight broth (0.5 mL) was then used to inoculate fresh LB/Amp broths (10 mL) and the culture incubated at 37 °C (200 rpm) until the optical density at 590 nm reached 0.5 -1.0 (about 3 h). To over-induce the expression of the foreign protein IPTG was added to a final concentration of 0.6 mM and the broth incubated (together with an un-induced control) at 37 °C for a further 3 to 5 h, during which time 1 mL samples were removed each hour from both cultures and kept on ice. At the conclusion of the sampling period the bacterial cells were collected by centrifugation at 20 800 x g for 30 s only, resuspended in 2 x SDS-PAGE gel loading buffer (60 μL), boiled for 4 min, centrifuged again for 3 min and loaded into a well of an SDS-PAGE gel (section 2.3.10). Usually 8 μL of sample supernatant was loaded. Following electrophoresis, the proteins in the gel were stained with coomassie brilliant blue (section 2.3.10.3) and the protein profiles examined at each time point for induction of the protein of the predicted mass.

2.3.2 Large Scale Induction of Recombinant Proteins

Reagents:
- Luria-Bertani broth (section 2.2.1.1)
- Isopropyl-β-D-thiogalactopyranoside (IPTG)
- Ampicillin (100 mg mL⁻¹)

From an overnight bacterial culture grown from a single colony (refer section 2.3.1), a 100 μl aliquot was used to inoculate fresh LB broth (100 mL), containing Amp (100 μg mL⁻¹), and incubated overnight at 37 °C (180 rpm). Fresh LB broths (4 x 500 mL), containing Amp
(100 μg mL⁻¹) were then inoculated with 20 mL aliquots of overnight broth (100 mL), and incubated at 37 °C (180 rpm) until A₅₉₀ nm = 0.5 - 1.0 was reached (approximately 5 h). After this time the temperature was reduced to 18 to 20 °C, IPTG was added to a final concentration of 0.6 mM and the bacterial culture was incubated for a further 24 h at 180 rpm (Shih et al., 2005).

The cells were then collected by centrifugation (Sorvall RC5-C, DuPont; rotor GS3) at 3 000 x g for 20 min at 4 °C, the supernatant removed and the cells resuspended in an appropriate buffer solution (refer section 2.3.3 for pGEX; or section 2.3.4 for pProEX-1), or kept at -80 °C.

Recombinant proteins were expressed at an incubation temperature of 18 to 20 °C as the result of a small scale expression study using various incubation temperatures (19 °C, 25 °C and 37 °C) indicated the recombinant proteins began to accumulate as membrane bound inclusion bodies at 25 °C, and most of the recombinant protein was in the pellet at incubation 37 °C and very little remained in the supernatant (data not shown). Many eukaryotic proteins, when expressed in bacteria, accumulate as insoluble inclusion bodies inside the cell (Marston, 1986; Rudolph and Lilie, 1996). The formation of inclusion bodies in *E. coli* can be a problem as the induced protein within the inclusion bodies is often inactive. It has been shown that lowering the incubation temperature increased the yield of correctly folded soluble protein (Schein and Noteborn, 1988; Zhang et al., 1995; Xu et al., 1998; Lay et al., 1996; Thrower et al., 2001). The extraction of protein from inclusion bodies is usually time consuming, difficult and the proteins are often denatured in the extraction process or as a result of their accumulation in the inclusion bodies.

### 2.3.3 Isolation of Glutathione-S-Transferase (GST) Fusion Proteins

**Reagents:**

- Glutathione Sepharose™ 4B (Amersham Pharmacia)
- 2 U  μL⁻¹ PreScission™ Protease (Amersham Pharmacia)
- Tris
- NaCl
- EDTA
- DTT
- Ascorbic acid
- Glycerol
- Modified cleavage buffer: 50 mM Tris-HCl, 100 mM NaCl, 1 mM EDTA, 1 mM DTT, 20 mM ascorbic acid, 10 % (v/v) glycerol (pH 7). stored at 4 °C for maximum of four days.
Cells of *E. coli* collected by centrifugation at 3000 x g for 20 min at 4 °C (section 2.3.2), were resuspended in 30 mL of (ice-cold) modified cleavage buffer, transferred to 50 mL sterile centrifuge tubes and then the bacteria were lysed using either a French Press (Wabash Instruments, Ennerpac hydraulics) to 7 Kpsi and repeated three times, or a model Z Plus 1.1 KW Cell Disrupter (Constant Systems Ltd., Northants, UK) at 30 Kpsi (once), or by using a Virsonic digital 475 Ultrasonic cell disrupter (The VirTis Company), fitted with a 3 mm diameter probe and used at an amplitude of 14 microns (45 s on, 45 s off, repeated 6 times; with the suspension kept cooled on ice during sonication). After disruption of the cells, the debris was removed by centrifugation at 12 000 x g for 20 min at 4 °C (Sorvall RC5-B; rotor SS34) and the lysate used immediately.

To prepare the Glutathione Sepharose 4B (GS-4B) slurry, an aliquot of 1.33 mL was transferred to a 50 mL sterile centrifuge tube, and after centrifugation (Sorvall RT7 tabletop centrifuge; RTH 750 rotors) at 500 x g for 5 min, the excess ethanol was removed. The GS-4B was then resuspended in ice-cold modified cleavage buffer (12 mL) and collected by centrifugation at 500 x g. This step was repeated twice more and following the third wash, the GS4B was resuspended in 1 mL of modified cleavage buffer and used immediately or stored at 4 °C briefly.

The prepared GS-4B slurry was added to the cell lysate and incubated for 30 min at room temperature with gentle mixing in a rotating incubator. The glutathione S- transferase fusion protein bound to GS-4B was then collected by centrifugation at 500 x g for 5 min and the supernatant decanted. The resin was then washed three times with modified cleavage buffer (12 mL) with centrifugation for 5 min at 500 x g for 5 min. After the third wash, as much supernatant as possible was removed, 1 mL of cold modified cleavage buffer was added, the resin carefully resuspended and the contents transferred to an Eppendorf tube where 8 U of PreScission Protease was added and gently mixed. For 16 h the contents were incubated at 4 °C with slow end-over-end mixing, before centrifugation at 500 x g for 5 min to separate the cleaved fusion protein from the GS-4B. The supernatant containing the fusion protein was then removed and put into a new Eppendorf labelled First Eluant. A further 400 μL of modified cleavage buffer was then added to the GS-4B slurry and the resuspended GS-4B incubated at 4 °C with slow end-over-end mixing for 4 h, after which time any remaining cleaved fusion protein was separated from the GS-4B by centrifugation at 500 x g for 5 min. The supernatant from this 4 h incubation was then removed and put into a new Eppendorf labelled Second Eluant. The protein concentration in each eluant was determined by the Bradford protein assay (section 2.3.7), and the purity of the protein assessed by SDS-PAGE (section 2.3.10). The elutions were stored at -20 °C until required.
2.3.4 Purification of His-Tagged Proteins by Metal Chelate Affinity Chromatography

Reagents:
- Ni-NTA resin (Life Technologies)

Table 2.2: Buffers A, B and C used in Metal Chelate Affinity Chromatography

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Components</th>
<th>Lysis buffer (A)</th>
<th>Wash buffer (B)</th>
<th>Elution buffer (C)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>NaH₂PO₄ (pH 8.5)</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaCl</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imidazole</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glycerol</td>
<td>10% (v/v)</td>
<td>10% (v/v)</td>
<td>10% (v/v)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The induced *E. coli* cells prepared in section 2.3.2 were resuspended in lysis buffer A and after cell disruption (section 2.3.3) the debris was removed by centrifugation at 12 000 x g for 20 min at 4 °C (Sorvall RC5-C; rotor SS34). Nickel nitrilotriacetic acid resin (Ni-NTA) chelates histidine residues and hence the His-tagged recombinant protein present in the supernatant was purified away from the bacterial protein contaminants by metal-chelate affinity chromatography.

Ni-NTA with a bed volume of 1.5 mL, was housed in a 10 mL disposable syringe barrel (Becton Dickensen) fitted with two layers of GF-A glass microfibre filter paper (Whatman) to prevent leakage of the column matrix. Prior to adding the sample, the column was pre-equilibrated with 8 to 10 volumes of Buffer A at a flow rate of 0.5 mL min⁻¹. The supernatant obtained above was gently loaded onto the column, allowed to run in, the column washed with ten volumes of Buffer A, two volumes of Buffer B, and the fusion protein eluted with ten volumes of Buffer C. The eluate was collected in 0.5 to 1 mL fractions and aliquots of each fraction analysed by SDS-PAGE (section 2.3.10) and the protein quantified (section 2.3.7) to determine which fractions contained the fusion protein. These fractions were then combined.

2.3.4.1 Cleaning of Nickel Nitrilotriacetic Acid (Ni-NTA) Resin

Ni-NTA resin was cleaned immediately after use and only reused for chelating identical recombinant isoforms. The procedures are recommended by Qiagen, based on the experiments of Hoffman-La Roche Ltd., (Basel, Switzerland).
Reagents:

- SDS
- EDTA
- ethanol
- sodium azide
- wash buffer: 0.2 M acetic acid containing 30 % (v/v) glycerol
- regeneration buffer: 6 M guanidine-HCl, 0.2 M acetic acid
- recharging buffer: 100 mM nickel sulphate (NiSO₄)

After each run the column was rinsed using 5 bed volumes of wash buffer followed by 3 volumes of 30 % (v/v) ethanol and then stored at 4 °C.

Following five runs the Ni-NTA was regenerated as follows: 2 column volumes of regeneration buffer, 2 column volumes of water, 3 column volumes of 2 % (w/v) SDS, 1 column volume of 25 % (v/v) ethanol, 1 column volume of 50 % (v/v) ethanol, 1 column volume of 75 % (v/v) ethanol, 5 column volumes of 100 % (v/v) ethanol, 1 column volume of 75 % (v/v) ethanol, 1 column volume of 25 % (v/v) ethanol, 5 column volumes of water, 5 column volumes of 100 mM EDTA (pH 8), 5 column volumes of water, 2 column volumes of 100 mM NiSO₄ and finally, 5 column volumes of water. The Ni-NTA was then either equilibrated with 2 column volumes of Lysis Buffer A (section 2.3.4) for immediate use, or stored in 30 % (v/v) ethanol at 4 °C. If the column was to be stored for more than 1 to 2 days 0.02 % (w/v) sodium azide was included in the wash buffer (3 column volumes) and stored at 4 °C.

2.3.4.2 Cleavage of the Histidine Tag (His-Tag) from the Fusion Protein Using Tobacco Etch Virus (TEV) Protease

Removal of the affinity tag from recombinant protein was based on concern about the possible interference the His tag fusion protein expressed using the pROEx-1 Vector (Figure 2.4), may have on the activity of ACO. Although according to the manufacturers, the extra amino acids on the N-terminal do not affect enzyme activity (Life Technologies Gibco BRL), it seems reasonable to expect ≥ 20 extra residues (six histidine, a spacer region and the TEV protease cleavage site) to have some affect on the folding of the protein and hence enzyme activity. Thus, in some experiments, the N-terminus 'His-tag' was removed using TEV protease. The TEV protease digestion assay is based on web page information from Dr DS Waugh, Protein Engineering Section, Macromolecular Crystallography Laboratory, National Cancer Institute at Frederick, MD, USA (Kapust et al., 2002a; Phan et al., 2002).
Materials and Methods

Reagents:
- TEV (tobacco etch virus) protease (Invitrogen)
- Buffer: 50 mM Tris-HCl, pH 8, 0.5 mM EDTA, 1 mM DTT

The N-terminal Histidine tag (His-tag) was removed by TEV protease in a 1:5 ratio, (1 OD$_{280}$ nm of TEV protease to 5 OD$_{280}$ nm of substrate) made up to a final volume of 140 µL with buffer, and incubated at 4 °C overnight (Nallamsetty et al., 2004).

Since DTT is a strong reducing agent (reduces nickel ions), the buffer was replaced with 50 mM Tris-HCl, (pH 8) using Vivaspin concentrators (section 2.3.5). The cleaved protein was then loaded onto an Ni-NTA column (section 2.3.4) to remove the cleaved His tag, and the TEV protease which also contains a His tag (Kapust et al., 2001). As only three extra amino acids remain on the N-terminal of the TEV cleaved recombinant protein, the protein elutes from the Ni-NTA column leaving the His tags chelated to the nickel.

After protein concentrations were determined (section 2.3.7), the mass of the cleaved protein was compared with the mass of the uncleaved sample, by SDS-PAGE (section 2.3.10), and then the activity of the protein was assessed (sections 2.3.8 and 2.3.9) by comparing the activities of the cleaved His tag recombinant proteins with the His tag fusion proteins.

2.3.4.3 Acetone Precipitation of Recombinant Proteins
If necessary recombinant proteins were concentrated by acetone precipitation prior to examination by western analysis. To do this, 3 volumes of (ice cold) 100 % acetone was added to the protein, mixed well and left at 20 °C for 3 h. After centrifugation at 20 800 x g at 4 °C for 15 min, the acetone was removed and the pellet air dried for 5 to 10 min before resuspending in either water prior to reading the optical density at 595 nm, or in SDS loading buffer prior to acrylamide gel electrophoresis.

2.3.5 Sephadex G-25 Gel Filtration Chromatography
Sephadex G-25 was used to exchange the buffer that the His-tagged protein was in (after elution from the NTA-resin) into Buffer A for FPLC. The method is modified from that described by Neal and Florini (1973).

Reagents:
- Sephadex® G-25 resin (Pharmacia Biotech)
Materials and Methods

Gel filtration buffer: 25 mM Tris-HCl, pH 7.5; 2 mM DTT; 15 mM sodium ascorbate and 10 μM PA (Buffer A for FPLC)

To prepare the column, two layers of GF-A glass microfibre filter paper were cut into discs and placed at the bottom of a 30 mL disposable syringe barrel (Becton Dickensen). Sephadex G-25 slurry was poured into the syringe barrel and allowed to settle to provide a ca. 5 mL bed volume and was then pre-equilibrated with gel filtration buffer. The sample was loaded onto the column taking care not to disrupt the smooth surface of the resin, allowed to sink in, buffer added and the eluate collected in 1 mL fractions at a flow rate of ca. 3 mL min⁻¹. Bradfords protein assay (section 2.3.7) was used to determine the fractions which contained protein, and such fractions were pooled.

If necessary proteins were concentrated using Vivaspin concentrators (Vivascience Ltd., Hannover, Germany), with a polyethersulphone membrane and a 10 kDa cut-off. The membranes were pre-conditioned with either de-ionized water or STET buffer (8 % (w/v) Sucrose, 0.5 % (w/v) Triton X-100, 50 mM EDTA, pH 8, 10 mM Tris, pH 8), rinsed with copious amounts of de-ionized sterile water before centrifugation at 3 000 x g at ca. 4 °C.

Once used, the Sephadex G-25 was immediately placed into a clean beaker, washed with 0.2 M NaOH solution, followed by several rinses with Milli-Q water until the supernatant was pH 7, and then stored at 4 °C.

In order to retain ACO activity, the E. coli cells harbouring the recombinant proteins were harvested by centrifugation at 3 000 x g for 20 min at 4 °C (section 2.3.2), the cells disrupted (section 2.3.3), metal chelate affinity chromatography (section 2.3.4), and gel filtration chromatography were carried out within the same day and the concentrate stored at -20 °C overnight for further purification the next day.

2.3.6 Fast Protein Liquid Chromatography (FPLC)

All buffer solutions for FPLC were filtered through a 0.22 M hydrophilic polypropylene membrane filter (Gelman Sciences, Ann Arbor, MI, USA) immediately before use. Protein samples were centrifuged at 10 000 x g for 20 min at 4 °C prior to being loaded on to the column.
2.3.6.1 Anion Exchange Chromatography

Ion exchange chromatography separates proteins by exploiting the different net charges on proteins at a given pH, due mainly to the side chains of acidic and basic amino acids on the surface of the protein. Thus, the overall net charge distributed on the protein surface dictates the unique behaviour of a protein in an ion exchange environment. The functional groups on the matrix carry either positive (anion exchanger) or negative charges (cation exchanger) and interact with proteins principally by electrostatic attractions. These interactions depend not only on the net charge of the protein but also on the ionic strength and pH of the buffer ions, the nature of these ions, and properties of the functional ligands (Scopes, 1994). Stationary phase matrices carrying charged groups that retain their charge over a narrow pH range are regarded as weak ion exchangers, whereas those stable over a wide pH range are considered strong exchangers. Separation of proteins is achieved by their difference in equilibrium distribution between a buffered mobile phase and a stationary phase consisting of a matrix to which charged inorganic groups are attached (Roe, 1989). The bound proteins are generally eluted from the ion exchange column by increasing the buffer ionic strength (with a salt gradient). For Mono-Q beads, each quaternary amino group attached to the matrix has a single positive charge on a nitrogen atom.

Reagents:
- Buffer A: 25 mM Tris-HCl, pH 7.5; 2 mM DTT; 15 mM sodium ascorbate; 10 μM PA
- Buffer B: 1 M NaCl; 25 mM Tris-HCl, pH 7.5; 2 mM DTT; 15 mM sodium ascorbate, 10 μM PA

The Mono-Q prepacked HR 5/5 strong anion column (Amersham/Pharmacia Biotech) was equilibrated with at least 5 volumes of buffer A at a flow rate of 0.25 mL min⁻¹. Samples were loaded onto the column, and proteins were eluted within an linear salt gradient of 100 % buffer A: 0 % buffer B to 0 % buffer A: 100 % buffer B, representing salt concentration change from 0 to 1 M NaCl, over 60 min. Fractions of 0.25 mL were collected automatically, kept on ice and assayed for protein content (section 2.3.7). The purity of recombinant ACO was assessed by SDS-PAGE (2.3.10) and western analysis (section 2.3.11). Enzyme activity was assessed (section 2.3.8 and 2.3.9) and active fractions stored at -20 °C.

2.3.6.2 Column Cleaning

The Mono-Q column was cleaned by carrying out the following steps in sequence with a reversed flow rate of 0.25 mL min⁻¹: (1) 4 mL of 1 M NaOH solution injected and then rinsed with filtered mill-Q water; (2) 4 mL of 1 M HCl solution injected and then rinsed with filtered
Materials and Methods

Mill-Q water; (3) 4 mL of 1 M NaCl solution injected and left to run overnight with filtered Mill-Q water. After cleaning the column was equilibrated with at least 10 column volumes of 20% (v/v) ethanol and stored at room temperature.

2.3.7 The Bradford Protein Assay

Reagents:
- Coomassie Brilliant Blue R-250 concentrate dye preparation (Bio-Rad, Hercules, CA, USA)
- BSA: bovine serum albumin, Fraction V, standard grade (Serva Feinbiochemica, Heidelberg, Germany).

The protein concentration of samples was estimated with a microassay version of Bradford's method (Bradford, 1976) and Zor Selinger (1996) using a commercially available dye from Bio-Rad.

Samples containing the protein to be measured were pipetted into 96-well microtitre plates and made up to 160 μL with Milli-Q water. Bio-Rad reagent (40 μL) was then added to each sample and mixed by drawing the mixture up and down in the pipette tip. The mixtures were incubated for 10 min at room temperature, and then the absorbance values of the samples read at 595 nm using an AnthosHT II plate reader (Anthos Labtech Instruments).

A protein standard curve was constructed in triplicate using a 1 μg mL⁻¹ BSA solution to determine the protein concentration of sample solutions. The samples used for protein estimation had absorbance readings in the linear region of the BSA curve (containing between 0.5 and 6.5 μg protein per 200 μL reaction). An equation was derived from the linear portion of the BSA curve and used to determine the protein concentration in the samples from their optical density values.

μg (protein in sample) = (OD₅₉₅nm x 8.95) − 2.57

Since the equation to determine the protein concentration may vary with each batch of the Bio-Rad protein dye, as the dye concentration may be slightly different from batch to batch, a new standard curve was constructed for each batch of the dye.

2.3.8 ACC Oxidase Assay

ACO activity was measured essentially according to the method described by Ververidis and John (1991). The assay measures the enzyme activity by quantifying ethylene produced from
the substrate ACC in the presence of co-substrate sodium ascorbate and the co-factors NaHCO₃ and FeSO₄, with DTT to protect the sulfhydryl group from oxidation.

Reagents:
- ACC
- DTT
- Glycerol
- Ferrous Sulphate (FeSO₄·7H₂O)
- Sodium ascorbate
- Sodium bicarbonate (NaHCO₃)
- Tri-potassium orthophosphate (K₃PO₄·H₂O)
- Phosphoric acid (H₃PO₄)
- 100 mM phosphate buffer (K₃PO₄·H₂O - H₃PO₄) pH 7.5, containing 20 % (v/v) glycerol

The standard reaction mixture was made up just prior to the assay to a final concentration of 50 mM phosphate buffer (pH 7.5) containing 10% v/v glycerol, 1 mM ACC, 2 mM DTT, 30 mM sodium ascorbate (made fresh, pH 5.9 to 6.0), 20 μM FeSO₄·7H₂O (freshly made) and 30 mM NaHCO₃ (freshly made). Once all the components of the reaction mixture had been added the pH was re-adjusted if necessary. Each ACO enzyme preparation was incubated at 30 °C for 1 min. To start the reaction, triplicate 0.2 mL enzyme samples were pipetted into 4.5 mL capacity vacutainer tubes (Becton Dickinson) containing reaction mixture (0.8 mL) pre-equilibrated at 30 °C. The vacutainer tubes were then sealed and the reactions incubated with shaking at 180 rpm for 20 min at 30 °C. After this time, 1 mL gas samples were removed, and the syringe needle tips were embedded in rubber to contain the evolved ethylene sample until the ethylene content was determined using gas chromatography (section 2.3.9.1).

2.3.8.1 Determination of pH Optimum
For the determination of the pH optimum, different aliquots of the standard 100 mM phosphate activity buffer containing 20 % (v/v) glycerol (section 2.3.8) were adjusted to the appropriate pH with phosphoric acid. The pH of each solution was again checked once all components of the standard reaction mixture (50 mM phosphate buffer, 10 % glycerol) had been added and adjusted if necessary. All buffers were stored at 4 °C and the pH checked prior to being used. The enzyme activity of each isoform over the pH range was assayed as described in section 2.3.9.
2.3.8.2 Optimal Requirements for Co-Substrate and Co-Factors

The optimal requirements of each isoform for co-substrate and cofactors were determined at their optimal pHs and saturating ACC concentrations. The different concentrations used in this study for sodium ascorbate were in the range from zero to 40 mM; for FeSO₄·7H₂O the range varied from zero to 40 μM; and for NaHCO₃ the range was from zero to 60 mM. The various concentrations of sodium ascorbate, sodium bicarbonate and iron sulphate were substituted as appropriate in the ACO activity assay (section 2.3.8).

2.3.8.3 Determination of $K_m$, $V_{max}$ and $K_{cat}$

The apparent $K_m$ and $V_{max}$ values of each of the ACO isoforms for their substrate, was determined by triplicate measurements of initial velocity at different ACC concentrations. The initial velocity data against ACC concentrations was graphed using the computer software programmes Microsoft Excel version 2000 (Microsoft, USA), ENZYPLOT (Walker, 1997) and ENZFITTER version 2.0 (BioSoft, Cambridge, UK). The saturating ACC concentration for each isoform was determined from the graphs. Line-weaver Burk plots (Lineweaver and Burk, 1934) were used to fit the data in a defined concentration range to a straight line and $K_m$ and $V_{max}$ values were determined from the regression equation. The range of ACC concentrations used were determined from preliminary experiments in which different ranges of concentrations of ACC were tried. In this study, the concentrations of ACC were 0.00, 0.05, 0.1, 0.25, 0.5, 1.0, 3.0, 6.0, 10 mM. In preliminary experiments, the ACC concentrations gave a very low ACO activity for MD-ACO2 and so ACC concentrations of 15, 20 and 30 mM were tried. The activity assay was performed at the optimal pH for each isoform as described previously. The $K_{cat}$ was determined from the equation: product (mol S⁻¹) / enzyme (mol).

2.3.8.4 Determination of Thermal Stability

To assess the thermal stability of each isoform, aliquots of each recombinant protein (1.5 mL) were put into Eppendorf tubes in triplicate and incubated at either 25 °C, 35 °C or 45 °C. Aliquots (150 μL) were taken out after 10 min, 20 min, 30 min, 60 min 90 min 120 min and 180 min and were added to the (pre-heated 30 °C) reaction mixture (section 2.3.8), the vacutainer tubes sealed and the reactions incubated and sampled as described in section 2.3.9. Aliquots of each enzyme were incubated for 1 min at 30 °C and used as the standard, each representing 100 % activity, against which the activity of the other samples were compared.
2.3.9 Ethylene Analysis

2.3.9.1 Measurement of Ethylene Using Gas Chromatography

The concentration of ethylene in gas samples was measured using a Gas Chromatograph, Model GC-8A (Shimadzu Corp., Kyoto, Japan) fitted with a flame ionization detector. The 2.5 m x 3 mm (I.D.) glass column prepacked with Porapak-Q with a mesh size of 80/100 (Alltech Associates Inc., Deerfield, IL, USA) was used for the ethylene analysis. The carrier gas was nitrogen with a flow rate of 50 mL min\(^{-1}\). The flame as maintained by hydrogen and air at 60 kPa and 50 kPa respectively. The column was initially conditioned at 200 °C with a nitrogen carrier gas at 150 kPa, and thereafter for approximately 0.5 to 1 h before use. For measurement of samples, the oven and the injector/detector temperatures were set at 85 °C and 150 °C respectively.

A 1 mL standard calibration gas of 0.101 ppm ethylene in nitrogen (BOC Gases NZ Ltd.) was used for ethylene quantification. One mL of sample gas was injected several times onto the column and the peak retention time for ethylene was observed to be between 74 and 80 s.

2.3.9.2 Measurement of Ethylene Production in Plant Tissues

Detached intact apple leaves were weighed and then placed into 7 mL capacity glass universal bottles, the bottles were then sealed with suba-seal stoppers (Gallenkamp) and incubated at 30 °C for 20 min, after which time gas samples of 1 mL were removed. After each sampling, the evolved ethylene samples were contained in the syringe by forcing the syringe needles into a hard rubber block until measurement by gas chromatography.

2.3.9.3 Ethylene Calculations

The concentration of ethylene gas produced is expressed in nmol min\(^{-1}\) mg\(^{-1}\) for recombinant protein and for the intact apple leaves ethylene is expressed in nl g\(^{-1}\) FW h\(^{-1}\). The concentration of ethylene in ppm was calculated by measuring the height of each sample ethylene peak (generated by the chart recorder) and comparing this measurement to the height of the ethylene peak generated with the 0.101 ppm standard gas. The number of moles the sample peaks represented could then be determined by calculating the number of moles of gas in the vacutainer tube (using the ideal gas equation) and multiplying this by the concentration of ethylene in ppm.
\[ n = \frac{(PVnRT)}{ppm} \times 10^{-6} \]

The Ideal Gas Equation

\( n \) = total number of moles of gas in the vessel
\( P \) = pressure (101,325 kPa)
\( V \) = volume (m³)
\( R \) = universal gas constant, 8.314 J K⁻¹ mol⁻¹
\( T \) = temperature (298.15 K)

Since 1 mole of ethylene occupies 22.4 L at standard temperature and pressure, multiplying by 22.4 gives the amount of ethylene in L.

2.3.10 Sodium Dodecyl Sulphate-Polyacrylamide Gel Electrophoresis (SDS-PAGE)

SDS-PAGE separates proteins electrophoretically through a polyacrylamide gel on the basis of molecular mass, and was originally described by Laemmli (1970).

2.3.10.1 Preparing and Running Linear (12%) SDS-PAGE

Reagents:
- 40% (w/v) acrylamide-bis stock solution (Bio-Rad)
- 2 x resolving (separating) gel buffer: 0.75 M Tris-HCl, pH 8.8; 0.2% (w/v) SDS
- 2 x stacking gel buffer: 0.25 M Tris-HCl, pH 6.8; 0.2% (w/v) SDS
- 2 x SDS gel loading buffer: 24 mM Tris-HCl, pH 6.8; 20% (v/v) glycerol; 5% (w/v) SDS; 5% (v/v) 2-mercaptoethanol and 0.04% (w/v) bromophenol blue (stored -20 °C)
- 5 x SDS running buffer: 0.125 M Tris, 1 M glycine, 0.5% (w/v) SDS, pH ca. 8.3
- ammonium persulphate (APS) (Univar, Auburn, NSW, Australia)
- N,N,N’,N-Tetramethylethlenediamine (TEMED; Reidel-de haen ag seeleze)
- Prestained molecular markers, [low range (ca. 20.7 to 111 kDa)]: Phosphorylase B, Bovine serum albumin, Ovalbumin, Carbonic anhydrase, Soybean trypsin inhibitor and Lysozyme (Bio-Rad)
Table 2.3: Separating and Stacking Gels used for SDS-PAGE with the mini-protean® II cell (Bio-Rad)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Order of addition</th>
<th>Reagents</th>
<th>Separating gel (mL)</th>
<th>Stacking gel (mL)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>40 % (w/v) acrylamide-bis stock</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>2 x separating gel buffer</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>2 x stacking gel buffer</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Mill-Q water</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>10 % (w/v) APS</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>TEMED</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The separating (resolving) gel solution (12 %) was pipetted between two glass plates until the level reached ca. 2.5 cm below the top of the shortest plate. An overlay of Milli-Q water was pipetted onto the separating gel to prevent atmospheric oxidation. When the separating gel had polymerised (ca. 30 min), the layer of Milli-Q water was discarded and the separating-stacking gel interface rinsed twice with stacking gel, the complete 4 % stacking gel solution was then pipetted onto the separating gel and the well-forming combs inserted. After about 30 min, the stacking gel had polymerised and the prepared gels were placed into the mini-protean® II cell (Bio-Rad) apparatus. Running buffer was poured into the electrophoretic tank (ca. 800 mL), submersing the gels, and the combs were removed carefully from the stacking gel. Protein samples were prepared by mixing the appropriate sample amount with an equal volume of 2 x SDS gel loading buffer and placing into a boiling water-bath for 3 min. The solution was then centrifuged (12 000 x g for 1 min at room temperature) and the supernatants pipetted into the wells of the prepared gels. The loading wells have a capacity of 40 μL with the best resolution in samples that contained between 2 and 10 μg of protein. An aliquot (8 μL) of prestained molecular markers [low range (ca. 19.2 to 116 kDa)] were loaded in at least one well per gel. The gels were run until the dye front had eluted from the bottom of the gel. When examining protein above 20 kDa, the gel was run until the lowest molecular weight marker (ca. 20 kDa) had reached the bottom of the gel, giving a greater separation between the heavier proteins. All mini-gels were run at a constant 200 V. Following electrophoresis, the gels were either stained with coomassie brilliant blue (section 2.3.10.3) or transferred to a membrane (section 2.3.11.2).
2.3.10.2 Preparing and Running Gradient (10 %-20 %) SDS-PAGE

Reagents:
- Sucrose
- 2 x stacking gel buffer: 0.25 M Tris-HCl, pH 6.8; 0.2% (w/v) SDS

Table 2.4: Separating and stacking gels used to make a 10 to 20 % linear gradient gel of acrylamide for SDS-PAGE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reagents</th>
<th>Resolving Gel Heavy Solution (mL)</th>
<th>Resolving Gel Light Solution (mL)</th>
<th>Stacking Gel (mL)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Sucrose</td>
<td>3 g</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Milli-Q water</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. 4 x resolving gel buffer</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. 2 x stacking gel buffer</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. 40 % (w/v) acrylamide</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. 10 % (v/v) ASP</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. TEMED</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>0.02</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A 10 to 20 % linear gradient gel of acrylamide was prepared by mixing two solutions containing different concentrations of acrylamide, (designated heavy and light; Table 2.4), in a Hoefer SG100 gradient maker (Hoefer Scientific Instruments, San Francisco, CA, USA) and pumping the mixture using a 2120 Varioperpex®II peristalsis pump (LKB Vertriebs Ges.m.b.H., Vienna, Austria) in between two sealed glass plates (16.5 x 22 cm). After the separating gel was poured to ca. 20 mm below the top of the smaller glass plate, a layer of Milli-Q water was pipetted onto the surface of the gel and the gel left to polymerise overnight at 4 °C or for 90 min at room temperature. After this time, the water was discarded, the separating gel rinsed briefly with stacking buffer, the stacking gel solution pipetted onto the separating gel, the well-forming comb inserted and the stacking gel allowed to set for ca. 30 min. The protein samples were prepared as described in section 2.3.10.1. Electrophoresis was conducted at 100 V through the stacking gel and 200 V through separating gel, and was usually terminated after 6 to 7 h.

2.3.10.3 Coomassie Brilliant Blue (CBB) Staining

Reagents:
- CBB stain solution: 0.1 % (w/v) Coomassie Brilliant Blue R-250, 40 % (v/v) methanol, 10 % (v/v) acetic acid.
- CBB destain solution: 30 % (v/v) ethanol
Materials and Methods

Following electrophoresis, the separated protein bands were detected by CBB staining. Gels were immersed in CBB stain for 30 min (mini gels) or overnight for larger gels with gentle shaking, followed by destaining until protein bands became visible. The gels were usually photographed or scanned immediately, and then air dried by placing between two sheets of Gel Air Cellophane Support (Bio-Rad) at room temperature.

2.3.11 Western Analysis

2.3.11.1 Production of Primary Polyclonal Antibodies to MD-ACO3

Reagents:
- Freund’s adjuvant (complete and incomplete) (Difco Laboratories, Detroit, MI, USA)
- Phosphate Buffered Saline (PBS)

Polyclonal antibodies were raised against the MD-ACO3 fusion protein after purification by affinity chromatography, gel filtration and fast protein liquid chromatography (sections 2.3.4, 2.3.5 and 2.3.6). For the initial inoculation 400 μg of fusion protein (antigen) was made up to 0.6 mL with PBS and then 0.6 mL of complete Freund’s was added and vortexed vigorously to form an emulsion. Rabbits (Calif. x NZ white) at the Small Animal Production Unit (SAPU), Massey University, were inoculated with the fusion protein by Debbie Chesterfield. The rabbits were boosted three times at 4 to 5 week intervals with 300 μg of fusion protein made up to 0.6 mL with PBS, and then vortexed with 0.6 mL of incomplete Freund’s as described previously.

Blood was collected from the rabbits by ear bleeds performed by Debbie Chesterfield. The collected blood was left at room temperature for 3 h and allowed to clot further at 4 °C overnight. The antisera containing the antibodies was then removed from around the clot and any remaining cells were pelleted by centrifugation at 10 000 x g for 10 min and the serum (supernatant) removed to a fresh tube and stored at -20 °C (Hock et al., 1992). The antibodies for MD-ACO1 were already available in the McManus Lab.

2.3.11.2 Electrophoretical Transfer of Proteins from Gel to PVDF Membrane

Reagents:
- Wet transfer buffer: 25 mM Tris, 190 mM glycine (pH 8.3), 10 % (v/v) methanol
- Semi-dry transfer buffer: 48 mM Tris, 39 mM glycine (pH 9.2), 20 % (v/v) methanol

Proteins separated by SDS-PAGE were electrophoretically transferred to Polyvinylidene difluoride membrane (PVDF; Perkin Elmer™, Polyscreen® or Immobilin-P) using a Trans-Blot Electrophoretic Transfer Cell (Bio-Rad), by the wet transfer method (Figure 2.8) described by
Materials and Methods

Figure 2.8: Western Blotting Apparatus: Assembly of the Electrophoretic Transfer of Proteins from an Acrylamide Gel to PVDF Membrane.

1. safety lid
2. cathode assembly with latches
3. two pieces of Whatman filter paper
4. gel
5. PVDF membrane
6. two pieces of Whatman filter paper
7. spring-loaded anode platform, mounted on four guide posts
8. power cables
9. base

Figure 2.9: BioRad Semi-Dry Trans-Blot Cell
Towbin et al., (1979) with some modifications, or using a Semi-Dry Trans-blot®SD Electrophoretic Transfer Cell (Bio-Rad) by the method (Figure 2.9) described by Bjerrum and Schafer-Nielsen, (1986).

For the wet transfer, the cassette holder with the gel and membrane was assembled as shown in Figure 2.8. The cassette was set up while partially immersed in transfer buffer so as to exclude air bubbles which can interfere with transfer. The PVDF membrane was soaked for 15 s in 100 % methanol and then 2 min in Milli-Q water and finally 5 min in transfer buffer prior to placing on top of the gel. All wet transfers were run for 45 min at 250 mA constant current.

For the semi-dry transfer, the gel and membrane were set up on the apparatus as shown in Figure 2.9. The protein gel was soaked for 15 min in semi-dry transfer buffer, while the PVDF membrane was soaked for 15 s in 100 % (v/v) methanol, then 2 min in Milli-Q water and finally 5 min in semi-dry transfer buffer. All semi-dry transfers were run for 30 min at 12 V, with a 500 mA limit (5.5 mA cm⁻² maximum).

2.3.11.3 Immunodetection of Proteins on PVDF Membrane

Reagents:
- Phosphate Buffered Saline: (PBS): 50 mM sodium phosphate, pH 7.4 and 250 mM NaCl
- Phosphate Buffered Saline – Tween (PBS-T): 0.5 % (v/v) Tween-20 in PBS
- Goat anti-rabbit Immunoglobulin G (IgG) conjugated to alkaline phosphatase (Sigma)
- Rabbit anti-MD-ACO (refer section 2.3.11.1)
- Substrate for alkaline phosphatase (light sensitive): 150 mM Tris-HCl, pH 9.7 containing 0.01 % (w/v) 5-bromo-4-chloro-3-indoylphosphate (BCIP), 0.02 % (w/v) p-nitro blue tetrazolium chloride (NBT), 1 % (v/v) dimethylsulphoxide (DMSO), 8 mM MgCl₂.
- I-Block™ (Tropix, Bedford, MA, USA)

Following electrophoretic transfer, the PVDF membrane was placed into a blocking solution [PBS containing 0.2 % (w/v) I-Block] for either 1 h at room temperature or 4 ºC overnight. After this time the blocking solution was discarded and the membrane rinsed briefly with PBS-T. The membrane was then incubated in the primary antibody solution (either 1 in 500 dilution of anti-MD-ACO1 in PBS; or 1 in 10,000 dilution of anti-MD-ACO3 in PBS) for 1 h at 37 ºC. Following incubation the antibody solution was tipped off and the membrane washed 3 times (ca. 3 min for each wash) with PBS-T (ca. 50 mL) at room temperature. The membrane was then incubated for 1 h with the secondary antibody (1 in 10,000 dilution of goat anti-rabbit IgG alkaline phosphatase conjugate) at room temperature. The membrane was then washed (3 x 10 min) with PBS-T and twice with 150 mM Tris-HCl, pH 9.7, to remove the phosphate that could...
interfere with the activity of the alkaline phosphatase conjugate (by binding to the active site), (Brenna et al., 1975; Zhang et al., 2004). The membrane was then submerged in the substrate for alkaline phosphatase and, when sufficient colour had developed, the reaction was stopped immediately by discarding the substrate solution and rinsing the membrane several times in RO water. Each incubation step and substrate development was performed on a rocking or shaking platform (ca. 100 rpm). After air drying, the membrane was either scanned using a ScanJet IIcx (Hewlett Packard) with DeskScan II software (Hewlett Packard), or photographed digitally with an Alpha Imager™ 2000 Documentation and Analysis System (Alpha Innotech Corporation, San Leandro, CA, USA).

2.3.11.4 Amino Acid Sequencing of N-Terminal Peptide Sequences

Reagents:

- Transfer buffer: 10 mM 3-(cyclohexylamino)-1-propane sulfonic acid (CAPS), pH 11 containing 20 % (v/v) methanol
- PVDF Stain: 0.1 % (w/v) coomassie brilliant blue in 50 % (v/v) methanol
- Destain: 10 % (v/v) acetic acid in 50 % (v/v) methanol

Proteins for N-terminal peptide sequencing were electroblotted onto PVDF membrane following SDS-PAGE (section 2.3.10.1), based on a method by Wong et al., (1993). Electrophoretic transfer of proteins from gel to PVDF membrane was conducted as described for wet transfer (section 2.3.11.2), except the transfer buffer used was 10 mM CAPS (pH 11), containing 20 % (v/v) methanol. Immediately after transfer, the membrane was stained for ca. 10 s, destained for 3 to 4 min, rinsed thoroughly with RO water and air dried. Samples were then submitted to the Protein Microchemistry Facility, Department of Biochemistry, University of Otago for N-terminal amino acid sequence analysis.
Chapter Three RESULTS

3.1 ACC Oxidase Genes in *Malus domestica* Borkh. (Apple)

3.1.1 Molecular Cloning of Protein-Coding Regions of ACC Oxidase Genes in *Malus domestica* (cultivar: Gala).

In order to identify ACO genes expressed in the leaves of *Malus domestica* cv. Gala, apple bourse shoot leaves were analysed. Newly initiated green leaves, mature fully expanded green leaves and those at the onset of senescence (where measured chlorophyll concentration decreased significantly; data not shown) were selected and total RNA extracted. Reverse transcriptase (RT) was then used to make cDNA from the mRNA using an oligo d(T)₁₅ primer. ACO cDNA was amplified by the polymerase chain reaction (PCR) using degenerate oligonucleotide primers known to bind to highly conserved regions within ACO genes. The primer sequences were provided by Professor Shang Fa Yang (University of California, Davis, USA). Nested PCR primers were used to amplify ACO sequences in two rounds of PCR. The first round primers (ACOF₁ and ACOR₁) generated cDNA from total mRNA, and aliquots of this first round PCR were used as templates for amplification using the second round primers (E₁₀₁ and E₁₀₂). The sequence of the primers used in RT-PCR to amplify putative ACO gene sequences are shown as Figure 2.2.

The amplified products after the first round of PCR were unable to be detected after electrophoresis on a 1% (w/v) agarose gel and ethidium bromide staining (data not shown). However, after two rounds of PCR, amplification products of approximately 850 bp were obtained (Figure 3.1). Total RNA without RT treatment was used as template for the two rounds of PCR to act as a control, and since no ca. 850 bp PCR product was amplified (Figure 3.1 lane 1), this indicates that the ca. 850 bp band was a genuine RT-PCR product.

The second round ca. 850 bp PCR products were recovered from the 1% (w/v) agarose gel, then cloned into the pGEM®-T Easy Vector (Figure 2.5 and 2.6) and transformed into the *E. coli* strain DH5α. The white colonies from the transformation, which used LB Amp¹⁰⁰ plates with IPTG and X-Gal, were picked and cultured in LB Amp¹⁰⁰ broths. Plasmids were isolated (section 2.2.5.1 or 2.2.5.2), and the presence of insert of ca. 850 bp was confirmed by restriction enzyme digestion with EcoRI and with SalI followed by agarose gel electrophoresis. Each colony was then allocated a unique identification (JEB #) and the number of colonies with and without inserts is provided as Table 3.1. Fragment of ca. 500 bp and 250 bp (not visible)
Nested degenerate primers were used for two rounds of PCR amplification. PCR products were separated on 1% (w/v) agarose gel and visualized with ethidium bromide.
Lane 1: The control using the same amount of RNA without RT-treatment as a template
Lane 2: The products from the second round PCR (newly initiated green leaves)
Lane 3: The products from the second round PCR (mature green leaves)
Lane 4: The products from the second round PCR (senescing leaves)
Lane 5: 1Kb DNA ladder (Gibco BRL). The molecular weights of two of the standards are indicated on the right of the figure. The approximate size of the amplification product is indicated by an arrow to the left of the figure.
Results indicated the presence of an EcoRI restriction site within the ca. 850 bp insert of some of the fragments (Figure 3.2). The larger DNA fragment (ca. 3015 bp) is the pGEM®-T Easy Vector (Figure 2.5). Although there is only one SalI restriction site in the multiple cloning site (MCS) of the pGEM®-T Easy Vector, since linearized vectors can not be supercoiled and thus run slower / heavier than a circular uncut vector, a SalI restriction digest was included as an added possible indicator of the presence of an insert.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source of RNA</th>
<th>JEB: colonies</th>
<th>Clone (insert)</th>
<th>(no insert)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Initial leaf</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>JEB:14,15,16,18,19,20,21,22</td>
<td>JEB:11,12,13,17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fully expanded leaf</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>JEB:1,3,4,26,27,28</td>
<td>JEB:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Senescing leaf</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>JEB:5,6,8,9,10,23</td>
<td>JEB:7,24,25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total:</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Vectors thought to contain an ACO insert after restriction enzyme mapping were isolated for sequencing (section 2.2.5.4) and DNA sequences were determined using an automated sequencer.

3.1.2 Confirmation of Putative ACC Oxidase cDNAs

A total of 20 clones were sequenced, the electrophoretograms (chromatograms) analysed, carefully edited and alignments made using MT Navigator, Sequencher and GCG software programs (section 2.2.6.1). Two different sequences were clearly distinguishable amongst the clones, and these were designated JEB:a (JEB:1, 3, 4, 8, 10, 18, 19, 20, 21; with an identity of >99%) and JEB:β (JEB:5, 6, 9, 14, 15, 16, 22, 23, 26, 27, 28; with an identity of >99%).

A National Centre or Biotechnology Information (NCBI) nucleotide comparison using the Basic Logical Alignment Search Tool (BLAST) of the Genbank database was carried out against the groups of sequences designated JEB:a and JEB:β (Table 3.2). A BLAST search against JEB:a (Table 3.2A) reveals the first hit to be an ACO from asian pear (Pyrus pyrifolia) and the second hit to be apple fruit (Malus domestica) ACO mRNA from the cultivar Fuji (Genbank accession AJ001646; Castiglione et al., 1997a). The third hit is an ACO from Malus sylvestris from ripe fruit (clone pAE12 Genbank Accession M81794; the clone pAE12, Genbank Accession M81794 is also reported by the same authors Dong et al., 1992 as occurring in the cultivar Golden Delicious, Malus domestica), and the fourth hit is also from ripe fruit of Golden Delicious (designated clone pAP4, Genbank accession X61390; Ross et al., 1992).
Figure 3.2: Cloning of Putative cDNAs Encoding ACC Oxidase in Newly Initiated Green Leaves, Mature Green Leaves and Senescing Leaves of Malus domestica Generated using RT-PCR.

Restriction digest of plasmids isolated from E. coli to confirm cloning of the ca. 850 bp cDNA fragments. Inserts obtained from EcoRI-digestion of plasmids containing putative ACC oxidase sequences were separated on 1% (w/v) agarose gel and visualized with ethidium bromide.

Lane 1. Uncut/undigested clone JEB:14
Lane 2. Clone JEB:14 digested using EcoRI
Lane 3. Clone JEB:14 digested using SalI
Lane 4. Clone JEB:14 digested using SalI
Lane 5. 1 Kb Plus DNA Ladder
Lane 6. Uncut/undigested JEB:27
Lane 7. Clone JEB:27 digested using EcoRI
Lane 8. Clone JEB:27 digested using SalI
Lane 9. Uncut/undigested JEB:28
Lane 10. Clone JEB:28 digested using EcoRI
Lane 11. Clone JEB:28 digested using SalI
Lane 12. 1 Kb Plus DNA Ladder
Lane 13. Uncut/undigested JEB:8
Lane 14. Clone JEB:8 digested using EcoRI
Lane 15. Clone JEB:8 digested using SalI
Lane 16. Clone JEB:9 digested using EcoRI
Lane 17. Uncut/undigested JEB:9
Lane 18. Clone JEB:9 digested using SalI
Lane 19. 1 Kb Plus DNA Ladder
From this BLAST search, the JEB:a sequences closely matched other *Malus domestica* ACO sequences present in the Genbank database.

Other hits against *Malus domestica* include genomic ACO DNA with hit 8 from cv. Fuji (Genbank accession AF015787; Nam and Kim, 1998), hit 10 from cv. Golden Delicious (Genbank accession Y14005; Castiglione et al., 1998), hit 11 from cv. Fuji (Genbank accession X98627; Castiglione et al., 1997b) and hit 12 from cv. Granny Smith (Genbank accession AF030859; recorded in the Genbank as Ross et al., 1998, but actually published in the journal Plant Molecular Biology as Atkinson et al., 1998).

In contrast, a BLAST search against JEB:β revealed that the sequence most closely matched *Prunus armeniaca* (apricot), *Prunus mume* (Japanese apricot) and *Prunus persica* (peach) particularly (refer Table 3.2B). *Malus domestica* ACO mRNA occurs eventually as hits 22, 23 and 25 corresponding to Genbank accessions X61390 (Ross et al., 1992), M81794 (Dong et al., 1992) and AJ001646 (Castiglione et al., 1997a) respectively. From this BLAST search the JEB:β group of sequences from apple seem not to be present in the NCBI Genbank database.

Table 3.2A: Results of a Nucleotide BLAST Search Against JEB:a, 819 bp cDNA Sequence.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Genus, species (and cultivar)</th>
<th>Accession number</th>
<th>Identities</th>
<th>Score (bits)</th>
<th>E Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pyrus pyrifolia mRNA</td>
<td>D67038</td>
<td>94 %</td>
<td>1266</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malus domestica mRNA (Fuji fruit)</td>
<td>AJ001646</td>
<td>93 %</td>
<td>1216</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malus sylvestris mRNA (pAE12, Golden D.)</td>
<td>M81794</td>
<td>93 %</td>
<td>1208</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malus domestica mRNA (pAP4, Golden D.)</td>
<td>X61390</td>
<td>93 %</td>
<td>1208</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pyrus communis mRNA</td>
<td>X87097</td>
<td>93 %</td>
<td>1172</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prunus persica PP-ACO2 mRNA</td>
<td>AB044712</td>
<td>87 %</td>
<td>790</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rosa hybrid cultivar</td>
<td>AF441282</td>
<td>86 %</td>
<td>726</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malus domestica genomic (Fuji)</td>
<td>AF015787</td>
<td>98 %</td>
<td>641</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prunus persica</td>
<td>AF129074</td>
<td>88 %</td>
<td>581</td>
<td>e-163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malus domestica genomic (Golden D.)</td>
<td>Y14005</td>
<td>95 %</td>
<td>553</td>
<td>e-154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malus domestica genomic (Fuji)</td>
<td>X98627</td>
<td>95 %</td>
<td>553</td>
<td>e-154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malus domestica genomic (Granny S.)</td>
<td>AF030859</td>
<td>95 %</td>
<td>553</td>
<td>e-154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Actinidia deliciosa</td>
<td>M97961</td>
<td>83 %</td>
<td>462</td>
<td>e-127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Actinidia deliciosa mRNA</td>
<td>AB003514</td>
<td>83 %</td>
<td>462</td>
<td>e-127</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Searched on 26 August, 2002  (E value; refer section 2.2.6.1)
Table 3.2B: Results of a Nucleotide BLAST Search Against JEB:β, 816 bp cDNA Sequence.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Genus, species (and cultivar)</th>
<th>Accession number</th>
<th>Identities</th>
<th>Score (bits)</th>
<th>E Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Prunus armeniaca</td>
<td>AF026793</td>
<td>90 %</td>
<td>1034</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prunus mume PM-ACO1</td>
<td>AB031027</td>
<td>89 %</td>
<td>1018</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prunus persica</td>
<td>AF319166</td>
<td>89 %</td>
<td>1006</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prunus persica mRNA</td>
<td>X77232</td>
<td>89 %</td>
<td>1006</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prunus persica PP-ACO1</td>
<td>AB044711</td>
<td>89 %</td>
<td>970</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fagus sylvatica mRNA</td>
<td>AJ420190</td>
<td>82 %</td>
<td>526</td>
<td>e-146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Populus euramericana</td>
<td>AB033504</td>
<td>82 %</td>
<td>506</td>
<td>e-140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fagus sylvatica</td>
<td>AJ420189</td>
<td>82 %</td>
<td>502</td>
<td>e-139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pelargonium hortorum</td>
<td>U67861</td>
<td>82 %</td>
<td>460</td>
<td>e-126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phaseolus lunatus</td>
<td>AB062359</td>
<td>81 %</td>
<td>448</td>
<td>e-123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prunus persica</td>
<td>AF129073</td>
<td>91 %</td>
<td>422</td>
<td>e-121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Citrus sinensis</td>
<td>AF321533</td>
<td>81 %</td>
<td>369</td>
<td>e-112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pelargonium hortorum</td>
<td>U07953</td>
<td>82 %</td>
<td>369</td>
<td>2e-99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phaseolus vulgaris</td>
<td>AF053354</td>
<td>80 %</td>
<td>369</td>
<td>2e-99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carica papaya</td>
<td>AY077461</td>
<td>79 %</td>
<td>365</td>
<td>3e-98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Passiflora edulis</td>
<td>AB015493</td>
<td>80 %</td>
<td>355</td>
<td>3e-95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diospyros Kaki</td>
<td>AB038355</td>
<td>80 %</td>
<td>355</td>
<td>3e-95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trifolium repens</td>
<td>AF115262</td>
<td>80 %</td>
<td>349</td>
<td>2e-93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Betula pendula mRNA</td>
<td>Y10749</td>
<td>80 %</td>
<td>345</td>
<td>3e-92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mangifera indica mRNA</td>
<td>AJ297435</td>
<td>83 %</td>
<td>339</td>
<td>2e-90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carica papaya</td>
<td>U68215</td>
<td>79 %</td>
<td>335</td>
<td>4e-89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malus domestica mRNA (pAP4, Golden D.)</td>
<td>X61390</td>
<td>80 %</td>
<td>335</td>
<td>4e-89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malus sylvestris mRNA (pAE12, Golden D.)</td>
<td>M81794</td>
<td>80 %</td>
<td>335</td>
<td>4e-89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trifolium repens</td>
<td>AF115263</td>
<td>79 %</td>
<td>327</td>
<td>9e-87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malus domestica mRNA (Fuji fruit)</td>
<td>AJ001646</td>
<td>80 %</td>
<td>327</td>
<td>9e-87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diospyros Kaki DK-ACO1 mRNA</td>
<td>AB073008</td>
<td>81 %</td>
<td>325</td>
<td>4e-86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Actinidia delicosa</td>
<td>M97961</td>
<td>79 %</td>
<td>325</td>
<td>4e-86</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Searched on 24 April, 2002 (E value; refer section 2.2.6.1)

Preliminary alignments found that both the mRNA (pAP4) from Golden Delicious fruit (Genbank accession number X61390; Ross et al., 1992) and the coding regions of the genomic DNA from Granny Smith fruit (Genbank accession number AF030859; Ross et al., 1998) are identical (designated as Group I). Similarly, the mRNA from Fuji fruit (Genbank accession number AJ001646; Castiglione et al., 1997a) and the coding regions of the genomic DNA from Fuji (Genbank X98627; Castiglione et al., 1997b) are identical (designated group II). However, the coding regions of the genomic DNA from Golden Delicious (Genbank accession Y14005; Castiglione et al., 1998) and the mRNA from Fuji fruit (Genbank accession number AJ001646; Castiglione et al., 1997b) differed by five base-pairs. The the coding regions of genomic DNA from Fuji (Genbank accession AF015787; Nam and Kim, 1998) differed markedly from all of the other sequences (designated Group III).
The consensus nucleotide sequence of \textit{JEB:}\alpha and \textit{JEB:}\beta were then compared with a sequence from Golden Delicious clones \textit{pAP4} and \textit{pAE12} (Group I) (Genbank accession numbers X61390 and M81794 respectively; Ross \textit{et al.}, 1992; Dong \textit{et al.}, 1992), a sequence from Fuji (Genbank accession number AJ001646; Castiglione \textit{et al.}, 1997a)(Group II), and the coding region of Fuji (Genbank accession number AF015787; Nam and Kim, 1998)(Group III)(Table 3.3). Alignments using MT Navigator, sequencher and GCG software programs (section 2.2.6.1) are shown as Table 3.3A. Genbank accession numbers X61390 and M81794 are identical sequences and differ from Genbank accession number AJ001646 by five base-pairs, which is reflected in a shared nucleotide percentage identity of 99.3 % determined using Gene Computer Group (GCG) programme, Fasta (Table 3.3B), representing a difference of four amino acids. Given the small differences between the Golden Delicious (X61390, M81794) and Fuji cultivar (AJ001646) sequences, which are likely due to cultivar and/or allelic variation or nucleotide sequencing error, the three sequences are probably encoded by the same gene, and this is designated as \textit{MD-ACO1}.

By contrast Genbank accession number AF015787 varies from both X61390:M81794 and the Fuji AJOO1646 by 56 base-pairs. Further, AF015787 has an additional 48 base-pairs at the 3' end of the sequence compared with X61390:M81794 and the AJOO1646 sequences. Inspection of the alignments of the X61390:M81794 and AJOO1646 sequences with the AF015787 sequence in Table 3.3A show the stop codon (TGA) of the shorter sequences aligns with the nucleotide sequence CGA (coding for arginine) of the AF015787 sequence. This apparent mutation of thymidine to cytidine (or vice versa) in the AF015787 sequence probably reflects the common ancestry between these DNA sequences. A comparison of the AF015787 sequence with the other sequences (Table 3.3B) give sequence identities of 90.5 % (X61390), 90.1 % (M81794) and 90.9 % (AJ001646), indicating that AF015787 is encoded by a distinct gene, and is designated \textit{MD-ACO2}.

The \textit{JEB:}\alpha sequence differs from the AF015787 sequence by only seven base-pairs (Table 3.3A) and shares a sequence identity of 98 % which strongly suggests that the sequences are encoded by the same gene. \textit{JEB:}\alpha differs from sequence X61390:M81794 by 48 base-pairs and from sequence AJOO1646 by 47 base-pairs, with sequence identities for X61390:M81794 of 93.6 % and with AJOO1646 of 94 %, which supports the view that \textit{JEB:}\alpha is encoded by a gene distinct from those encoding X61390:M81794 and AJOO1646. \textit{JEB:}\alpha and \textit{JEB:}\beta sequences differ by 211 base-pairs and share a nucleotide sequence identity of 78.9 %, similar base-pair differences are found between \textit{JEB:}\beta and the Genbank database sequences shown as Table 3.3A, which are also consistent with the percentage identities shared between \textit{JEB:}\beta and the sequences of X61390 (79.1 %), M81794 (79.5 %), AJOO1646 (78.5 %) and AF015787 (78.5 %)(Table 3.3B). Taken together, this data clearly indicates that \textit{JEB:}\beta may correspond to a distinct gene to \textit{JEB:}\alpha, and is designated \textit{MD-ACO3}. 
Table 3.3B: Nucleotide Identity (%) Between JEB:α and JEB:β and ACC Oxidase Sequences from Three Cultivars of Malus domestica.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>X61390</th>
<th>M81794</th>
<th>AJ001646</th>
<th>AF015787</th>
<th>JEB:α</th>
<th>JEB:β</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Golden Delicious fruit cortex (MD-ACO1)</td>
<td>Golden Delicious ripe fruit (MD-ACO1)</td>
<td>Fuji fruit (MD-ACO1)</td>
<td>Fuji exons from genomic leaf (MD-ACO2)</td>
<td>Gala</td>
<td>Gala</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X61390</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>99.3</td>
<td>90.5</td>
<td>93.6</td>
<td>79.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M81794</td>
<td>_</td>
<td>99.3</td>
<td>90.1</td>
<td>93.6</td>
<td>79.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AJ001646</td>
<td>_</td>
<td>_</td>
<td>90.9</td>
<td>94</td>
<td>78.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AF015787</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>_</td>
<td>98</td>
<td></td>
<td>78.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JEB:α</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>_</td>
<td>78.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JEB:β</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>_</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

As there is often wobble of the third base pair in a codon, the translated sequence may not reflect variations between nucleotide sequences, hence the putative amino acid sequence may in fact be a more meaningful indicator of whether or not sequences are encoded by distinct genes (refer Figures 3.3, 3.4 and 3.5).

From the nucleotide sequences of the groups designated JEB:α (813 bp) and JEB:β (816 bp) the deduced amino acid sequences were obtained using the Gene Computer Group (GCG) programme, Fasta (MAP function). Comparisons of the deduced amino acid sequences of JEB:α and JEB:β with those of Genbank accession numbers X61390; pAP4 (Ross et al., 1992) and AF015787 (Nam and Kim, 1998) are shown as Figure 3.3, and broadly confirm the nucleotide alignments. JEB:α and the AF015787 differ by four amino acids, whereas JEB:α and X6139 differ by 16 amino acids, while X6139 and AF015787 differ from each other, over the corresponding sequence, by 17 amino acids. Such results suggest JEB:α (cv. Gala) is encoded by the same gene as AF015787 from cv. Fuji (which has been designated MD-ACO2), and that both JEB:α and AF015787 are distinct from X61390 from cv. Golden Delicious (which is designated MD-ACO1). JEB:β differs quite markedly from X6139 (by 65 aa), JEB:α (by 68 aa) and AF015787 (by 72 aa) which strongly suggests that the JEB:β is encoded by a gene distinct from both Genbank accession numbers (X6139 and AF015787) and JEB:α (and is designated as MD-ACO3).
Results

Figure 3.3: Comparison Between the Translated Sequences of the Partial cDNAs \( JEB:a \) and \( JEB: \beta \) with the Corresponding ACC Oxidase Sequences as Indicated.

3.1.3 Expressed Sequence Tag (EST) Searches at HortResearch

With the \( JEB:a \) sequence (\( MD-AC02 \)) and the \( JEB: \beta \) (\( MD-AC03 \)) sequence proposed to correspond to different ACO genes, the next step was to search the EST library from apple constructed by HortResearch to identify homologous sequences (and therefore full length cDNA clones). The Genbank accession number X61390 sequence (clone \( pAP4 \); Ross et al., 1992) (designated \( MD-AC01 \)) had already been gifted to the McManus laboratory.
Searching for the ESTs with the closest matches to MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 began with aligning and comparing the contigs using sequencer, MT Navigator and GCG computer programs to assess their identities and/or orientation(s). Once selected a full bidirectional sequencing of the ESTs with the closest match to JEB:α or JEB:β was received from HortResearch.

Searching for the ESTs with the closest matches to JEB:α found the closest alignments were in fact with Genbank accession numbers X61390 (Ross et al., 1992), M81794 (Dong et al., 1992) and AJ001646 (Castiglione et al., 1997a), but with only a nucleotide identity of 90 %, and so it was therefore assumed that JEB:α was not in the HortResearch EST library. An attempt was then made to obtain the 3'-UTR sequence from JEB:α using 3'-RACE (data not shown), but as this was unsuccessful, a decision was then made to interrogate the HortResearch EST databank further using only the 3'-UTR (138 bp) of the Genbank accession number AF015787 (Nam and Kim, 1998) gene sequence. A sequence of 623 bp, designated as EST 153710, was the best hit/match and an aliquot of the vector containing the sequence was requested. The identity values of EST 153710 and each of the sequences is shown as Table 3.4. JEB:α : AF015787 share a high sequence identity of 97.6 %, followed by X61390 (pAP4; 86.6 %) and then JEB:β (78.5 %).

| Table 3.4: Identity (%) Between EST 153710 and the cDNA X61390 (pAP4), JEB:α :AF015787 and JEB:β. |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| EST 153710                    | AF015787                      | JEB:β                         |
| (623 bp)                      | (615 bp)                      | (428 bp)                      |
| X61390 : pAP4 (MD-AC01)       | JEB:α : AF015787 (MD-AC02)    | JEB:β (MD-AC03)               |
| 86.6%                         | 97.6%                         | 78.5%                         |

An alignment of the deduced amino acid sequence of AF015787 with those of EST 153710 (refer Figure 3.4) shows a difference of three amino acids over the length of the sequence, while JEB:α (MD-AC02) seems to be an exact match (with EST 153710) over the 834 bp sequence. After further interrogation of the HortResearch EST databank using both EST 153710 and JEB:α, a sequence of 1,230 bp designated EST 120223 extending from the 5'-UTR and matching the entire length of both EST 153710 and JEB:α was found. A comparison of the amino acid sequences of EST 120223 with both EST 153710 and JEB:α, as well as AF015787 is shown as Figure 3.4.
Figure 3.4: Comparison of the Deducted Amino Acid Sequences of *JEB: α* (*MD-ACO2*) with Genbank Accession Number AF015787 and EST 120223 and EST 153710. Variations of specific amino acid residues are shown in bold.
A further interrogation of the HortResearch EST databank using the nucleotide sequence of the group designated \(JEB:\beta\) (\(MD-ACO3\)) found two ESTs (designated 192136 and 179706) which closely matched the \(JEB:\beta\) sequence (Identities are shown in Table 3.5). The \(JEB:\beta\) sequence shares a high identity with the ESTs (98 %) whilst both X61390 (\(pAP4\); 78 %) and AF015787 (\(JEB:\alpha\); 77.3 %) share a much lower comparative identity.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>X61390 : (pAP4) ((MD-ACO1))</th>
<th>(JEB:\alpha) : AF015787 ((MD-ACO2))</th>
<th>(JEB:\beta) ((MD-ACO3))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>EST 179706</td>
<td>78%</td>
<td>77.3%</td>
<td>98%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EST 192136</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(1\) EST 179706 & EST 192136 share an identity of 99.2%.

Since the deduced amino acid sequences of EST 179706 and EST 192136 are identical to each other (Figure 3.5), they are probably the same gene. As the deduced 272 amino acids comprising the \(JEB:\beta\) sequence matches the EST sequences so well (98 % identity) it is likely that \(JEB:\beta\) (\(MD-ACO3\)) is the same \textit{Malus domestica} ACO isoform as EST 179706 and 192136.

### 3.1.4 Summary of gene nomenclature

Each of the three \textit{Malus domestica} ACO sequences were therefore designated as follows: Genbank accession number X61390 (\(pAP4\); Ross \textit{et al.}, 1992) and the corresponding genomic DNA sequence Genbank accession number AF030859 (Ross \textit{et al.}, 1998; Atkinson \textit{et al.}, 1998) as \(MD-ACO1\); EST 120223 and the corresponding genomic DNA sequence Genbank accession number AF015787 (Nam and Kim, 1998) as \(MD-ACO2\) (cloned in this thesis as \(pJEB:\alpha\)), and EST 179706 and 192136 are designated \(MD-ACO3\) (cloned in this thesis as \(pJEB:\beta\)).
Results

EST 179706
MENFPVINLESLNGERKATMEKIKDACEWGFELV
EST 192136
MENFPVINLESLNGERKATMEKIKDACEWGFELV

EST 179706
SHGIPTEFLDTVERLTKEHYKQCQERQQRFKELVASKGLE
EST 192136
SHGIPTEFLDTVERLTKEHYKQCQERQQRFKELVASKGLE

EST 179706
GVQTEVKEKMDWETFHRLRHPQSNISEVPLDKDEYRN
EST 192136
GVQTEVKEKMDWETFHRLRHPQSNISEVPLDKDEYRN

EST 179706
VMKEFALKLEKLLAQILDLLCCENLGLEYQGYLKKAFYG
EST 192136
VMKEFALKLEKLLAQILDLLCCENLGLEYQGYLKKAFYG

EST 179706
TKGPTFTGKTVSNYPPCPNPDPDKLKEHATDAGGLLFF
EST 192136
TKGPTFTGKTVSNYPPCPNPDPDKLKEHATDAGGLLFF

EST 179706
QDDKVSGQLLKDKGEWVDVPMPHRHSIVINLDQLEVIT
EST 192136
QDDKVSGQLLKDKGEWVDVPMPHRHSIVINLDQLEVIT

EST 179706
NGKYSVEHRVIAQTDTGTRMSIASFYNPGSDAVIYPA
EST 192136
NGKYSVEHRVIAQTDTGTRMSIASFYNPGSDAVIYPA

EST 179706
TLVEKEAEKKNQVPKFKVFDYMKLYAGVKFKEAKEPR
EST 192136
TLVEKEAEKKNQVPKFKVFDYMKLYAGVKFKEAKEPR

EST 179706
FEAMKAVEIKASFGLGPFVISTA
EST 192136
FEAMKAVEIKASFGLGPFVISTA

Figure 3.5: Comparisons of the Deduced Amino Acid Sequences of JEB:β (MD-ACO3) with EST 179706 and EST 192136.

3.1.5 Genomic structure of the Malus domestica ACC oxidase genes

The identities of the MD-ACO1 (Ross et al., 1998; Atkinson et al., 1998) and MD-ACO2 (Nam and Kim, 1998) genes are compared over the whole genomic sequence. As the genomic sequence of MD-ACO3 is unavailable the intron distribution is unknown. However, the open reading frame of MD-ACO3 is compared with MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 by following the beginning and the ending of each exon with the corresponding codon for the MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 exons at the boundary with the intron (Figure 3.6). Not surprisingly the identities between each of the exons of MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 is high. However, over the three introns the identity is lower (Table 3.6).
Figure 3.6: Gene Structure of *MD-ACO1* and *MD-ACO2*, with the Exon Length of *MD-ACO3* Indicated.

The boxes indicate the exon sequences and the numbers represent DNA sequence length in base pairs. The lines between the boxes represent the intron sequences, and the numbers indicate DNA length in base pairs. Restriction enzyme sites within each of the exons and introns is indicated as: \(X = X_{ba1}\), \(E = EcoRI\) and \(H = HindIII\).
| A | Exon-1 | MD-AC01 | MD-AC02 | MD-AC03 |
|   |       |         |         |         |
|   | MD-AC01 | -       | 94.3 %  | 77.1 %  |
|   | MD-AC02 | -       | -       | 77.1 %  |
|   | MD-AC03 | -       |         | -       |

| B | Exon-2 | MD-AC01 | MD-AC02 | MD-AC03 |
|   |       |         |         |         |
|   | MD-AC01 | -       | 96.5 %  | 78 %    |
|   | MD-AC02 | -       | -       | 77.4 %  |
|   | MD-AC03 | -       |         | -       |

| C | Exon-3 | MD-AC01 | MD-AC02 | MD-AC03 |
|   |       |         |         |         |
|   | MD-AC01 | -       | 96.1 %  | 86.6 %  |
|   | MD-AC02 | -       | -       | 83.5 %  |
|   | MD-AC03 | -       |         | -       |

| D | Exon-4 | MD-AC01 | MD-AC02 | MD-AC03 |
|   |       |         |         |         |
|   | MD-AC01 | -       | 89.2 %  | 75.2 %  |
|   | MD-AC02 | -       | -       | 73 %    |
|   | MD-AC03 | -       |         | -       |

| E | Intron-1 | MD-AC01 | MD-AC02 | MD-AC03 |
|    |          |         |         |         |
|    | MD-AC01  | -       | 86.4%   |         |
|    | MD-AC02  | -       | -       |         |
|    | MD-AC03  | -       |         |         |

| F | Intron-2 | MD-AC01 | MD-AC02 | MD-AC03 |
|    |          |         |         |         |
|    | MD-AC01  | -       | 79.2%   |         |
|    | MD-AC02  | -       | -       |         |
|    | MD-AC03  | -       |         |         |

| G | Intron-3 | MD-AC01 | MD-AC02 | MD-AC03 |
|    |          |         |         |         |
|    | MD-AC01  | -       | 76.4%   |         |
|    | MD-AC02  | -       | -       |         |
|    | MD-AC03  | -       |         |         |

| H | Genomic | MD-AC01 | MD-AC02 |
|    |         |         |         |
|    | MD-AC01 | -       | 88.6 %  (100 %) |
|    | MD-AC02 | -       |         |
|    | MD-AC03 |         | genomic sequence unavailable |
All three *MD-ACOs* share the same nucleotide length over the first three exons (Figure 3.6), and *MD-ACO1* and *MD-ACO2* each have a *Hind*III restriction site in exon 3. An examination of the three introns, however, strongly suggests *MD-ACO1* and *MD-ACO2* are encoded by different genes. Not only do they not share the same nucleotide length, but they each have different restriction sites within their introns. For example, there are two *Hind*III and an *Eco*RI restriction site in intron -2 in the *MD-ACO1* gene, not found in the *MD-ACO2* gene. Further, a *Hind*III restriction site in intron -1 of *MD-ACO2* is not present in *MD-ACO1*.

### 3.1.6 Sequence Analysis of ACC Oxidase from *Malus domestica*

#### 3.1.6.1 Nucleotide Sequence Identities Amongst the ORF of *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3*

Using the Gene Computer Group (GCG) programme, Fasta, identities between the ACO transcripts (refer Table 3.7A and 3.7B) show the identity between the entire open reading frames (ORF) of *MD-ACO1* and *MD-ACO2* (93.9 %) is greater than between the 3’-UTR sequences (69.5 %) which further supports the hypothesis of these being two distinct *MD-ACO* genes. This is consistent with white clover ACO studies (Hunter *et al.*, 1999) where greater identity was found over the coding region (> 90 %) than the 3’-UTR (~70 %). Whereas the identities between the ORF transcripts of *MD-ACO3* and both *MD-ACO1* (78.5 %) and *MD-ACO2* (77.8 %) are almost as low as the identities between the *MD-ACO3* transcripts for the 3’-UTR of *MD-ACO1* (68.4 %) and *MD-ACO2* (69.5 %). Identities between the MD-ACO amino acid sequences (Table 3.7C) reflects the percentage identities of the nucleotide sequences, but there is more apparent differentiation between the three proteins.

#### 3.1.6.2 NCBI Nucleotide Database BLAST Analysis of the Entire ORF for Each of the ACC Oxidase Sequences

The results of NCBI nucleotide Blast searches for each of the ACO transcripts is shown as Table 3.8.

The first four hits against the *MD-ACO1* sequence, are *Malus domestica* ACO mRNA for the *MD-ACO1* sequence, Genbank accession numbers X61390 (Ross *et al.*, 1992), M81794 (Dong *et al.*, 1992), DQ137848 and AJ001646 (Castiglione *et al.*, 1997a), followed by *Pyrus pyrifolia* and *Pyrus communis*. The first genomic DNAs are *Malus domestica* hit numbers 12, 13 and 14 Genbank accession numbers X98627 and Y14005 (Castiglione *et al.*, 1997b; 1998) and AF030859 (Ross *et al.*, 1998) all *MD-ACO1*, interrupted by *Prunus persica*, followed by hit number 16 Genbank accession AF015787 (Nam and Kim, 1998), the *MD-ACO2* sequence (Table 3.8A).
Table 3.7 (A): Open Reading Frame Nucleotide Sequence Identities of *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3*

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>MD-ACO1</th>
<th>MD-ACO2</th>
<th>MD-ACO3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO1</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>93.9%</td>
<td>78.5%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO2</td>
<td></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>77.8%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 3.7 (B): Nucleotide Sequence Identities of the 3’-UTR of *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3*

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>MD-ACO1</th>
<th>MD-ACO2</th>
<th>MD-ACO3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO1</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>69.5%</td>
<td>68.4%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO2</td>
<td></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>71%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 3.7 (C): Translated Amino Acid Sequence Identities of *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3*

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>MD-ACO1</th>
<th>MD-ACO2</th>
<th>MD-ACO3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO1</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>92.04%</td>
<td>80.57%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO2</td>
<td></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>75.16%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Table 3.8A: Results of a Nucleotide BLAST Search Against the Malus domestica ACC Oxidase (MD-ACO1) 942 bp cDNA Entire Open Reading Frame Sequence.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Genus and species</th>
<th>Accession number</th>
<th>Identities</th>
<th>Score (bits)</th>
<th>E Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hit 1: MD-ACO1 mRNA (ripe fruit cortex)</td>
<td>X61390</td>
<td>100 %</td>
<td>1867</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 2: MD-ACO1 mRNA (ripe fruit)</td>
<td>M81794</td>
<td>100 %</td>
<td>1867</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 3: MD-ACO1 mRNA</td>
<td>DQ137848</td>
<td>99 %</td>
<td>1852</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 4: MD-ACO1 mRNA (fruit)</td>
<td>AJ001646</td>
<td>99 %</td>
<td>1828</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pyrus pyrifolia mRNA (fruit)</td>
<td>D67038</td>
<td>98 %</td>
<td>1719</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pyrus communis mRNA (ripe fruit)</td>
<td>X87097</td>
<td>97 %</td>
<td>1643</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pyrus communis mRNA (fruit mesocarp)</td>
<td>AJ504857</td>
<td>96 %</td>
<td>1608</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pyrus pyrifolia mRNA (immature fruit)</td>
<td>AB042111</td>
<td>94 %</td>
<td>1455</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 9: Malus domestica mRNA</td>
<td>DQ137850</td>
<td>99 %</td>
<td>1245</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prunus persica mRNA (ppAC02) (fruit)</td>
<td>AB044712</td>
<td>86 %</td>
<td>743</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rosa hybrid mRNA</td>
<td>AF441282</td>
<td>86 %</td>
<td>737</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 12: MD-ACO1 genomic DNA</td>
<td>X98627</td>
<td>100 %</td>
<td>672</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 13: MD-ACO1 genomic DNA</td>
<td>Y14005</td>
<td>100 %</td>
<td>672</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 14: MD-ACO1 genomic DNA</td>
<td>AF030859</td>
<td>100 %</td>
<td>672</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prunus persica linear DNA</td>
<td>AF129074</td>
<td>88 %</td>
<td>573</td>
<td>1e-160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 16: MD-ACO2 genomic DNA</td>
<td>AF015787</td>
<td>96 %</td>
<td>569</td>
<td>6e-159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 29: MD-ACO3 mRNA</td>
<td>ABO86888</td>
<td>81 %</td>
<td>361</td>
<td>3e-96</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The first two hits against MD-ACO2 are Pyrus pyrifolia mRNA followed by Malus domestica ACO mRNA Genbank accession numbers X61390 (pAP4; Ross et al., 1992), M81794 (pAE12; Dong et al., 1992) and AJ001646 (Castiglione et al., 1997a) and DQ137848, all MD-ACO1 sequences. The first genomic DNA is hit number 12, which is Genbank accession AF015787 (Nam and Kim, 1998) the MD-ACO2 sequence, interrupted by Prunus persica, followed by Genbank accessions X98627, Y14005 (Castiglione et al., 1997b; 1998) and AF03859 (Atkinson et al., 1998) all MD-ACO1 sequences (Table 3.8B).

For MD-ACO3, the first hit is Malus domestica ACO mRNA (cv. Fuji), Genbank accession AB086888 (Hatsuyama et al., 2002) with 99 % identity over the entire coding sequence, and exactly the same amino acid sequence as MD-ACO3 (although the sequence is designated as MD-ACO2 in the Genbank database). This sequence was deposited on 25.12.02, and so was not available for the initial categorization of the JEB:α and JEB:β sequences (e.g. Table 3.2, searched on 26.08.02 and 24.04.02 respectively). Malus domestica ACO mRNA occurs again at hit numbers 44 and 45, Genbank accessions DQ137848 and X61390 (pAP4; Ross et al., 1992) respectively, both MD-ACO1 sequences, and genomic apple ACO occurs as hit 77 Genbank accession AF015787 (Nam and Kim, 1998), the MD-ACO2 sequence (Table 3.8C).
Table 3.8B: Results of a Nucleotide BLAST Search Against the *Malus domestica* ACC Oxidase (*MD-AC02*) 990 bp cDNA Entire Open Reading Frame Sequence.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Genus and species</th>
<th>Accession number</th>
<th>Identities</th>
<th>Score (bits)</th>
<th>E Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>Pyrus pyrifolia</em> mRNA (immature fruit)</td>
<td>AB042111</td>
<td>97 %</td>
<td>1786</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pyrus pyrifolia</em> mRNA (fruit)</td>
<td>D67038</td>
<td>94 %</td>
<td>1513</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 3: <em>MD-AC01</em> mRNA (ripe fruit cortex)</td>
<td>X61390</td>
<td>94 %</td>
<td>1489</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 4: <em>MD-AC01</em> mRNA (ripe fruit)</td>
<td>M81794</td>
<td>94 %</td>
<td>1489</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 5: <em>MD-AC01</em> mRNA (fruit)</td>
<td>AJ001646</td>
<td>94 %</td>
<td>1463</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 6: <em>MD-AC01</em> mRNA</td>
<td>DQ137848</td>
<td>94 %</td>
<td>1447</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pyrus communis</em> mRNA (ripe fruit)</td>
<td>X87097</td>
<td>93 %</td>
<td>1421</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pyrus communis</em> mRNA (fruit mesocarp)</td>
<td>AJ504857</td>
<td>93 %</td>
<td>1394</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 9: <em>Malus domestica</em> mRNA</td>
<td>DQ137850</td>
<td>95 %</td>
<td>1047</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Prunus persica</em> mRNA (<em>ppAC02</em>) (fruit)</td>
<td>AB044712</td>
<td>87 %</td>
<td>799</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Rosa hybrid</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AF441282</td>
<td>86 %</td>
<td>739</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 12: <em>MD-AC02</em> genomic DNA</td>
<td>AF015787</td>
<td>99 %</td>
<td>664</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Prunus persica</em> linear DNA</td>
<td>AF129074</td>
<td>88 %</td>
<td>505</td>
<td>1e-169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 13: <em>MD-AC01</em> genomic DNA</td>
<td>X98627</td>
<td>96 %</td>
<td>577</td>
<td>3e-161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 14: <em>MD-AC01</em> genomic DNA</td>
<td>Y14005</td>
<td>96 %</td>
<td>577</td>
<td>3e-161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 15: <em>MD-AC01</em> genomic DNA</td>
<td>AF030859</td>
<td>96 %</td>
<td>533</td>
<td>3e-161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 29: <em>MD-AC03</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AB086888</td>
<td>81 %</td>
<td>341</td>
<td>3e-90</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Searched on 27 August, 2006 (E value; refer section 2.2.6.1)

Table 3.8C: Results of a Nucleotide BLAST Search Against the *Malus domestica* ACC Oxidase (*MD-AC03*) 966 bp cDNA Entire Open Reading Frame Sequence.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Genus and species</th>
<th>Accession number</th>
<th>Identities</th>
<th>Score (bits)</th>
<th>E Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hit 1: <em>MD-AC03</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AB086888</td>
<td>99 %</td>
<td>1877</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pyrus pyrifolia</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AB042107</td>
<td>99 %</td>
<td>1844</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pyrus pyrifolia</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AB042105</td>
<td>94 %</td>
<td>1518</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pyrus pyrifolia</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AB042106</td>
<td>94 %</td>
<td>1503</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Prunus persica</em> mRNA</td>
<td>X77232</td>
<td>90 %</td>
<td>1168</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Prunus persica</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AF319166</td>
<td>90 %</td>
<td>1168</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Prunus armeniaca</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AF026793</td>
<td>90 %</td>
<td>1168</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Prunus mume</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AB031027</td>
<td>90 %</td>
<td>1160</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Prunus persica</em> mRNA (<em>ppAC01</em>)</td>
<td>AB044711</td>
<td>90 %</td>
<td>959</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Fagus sylvatica</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AJ706156</td>
<td>85 %</td>
<td>747</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Morus alba</em> mRNA</td>
<td>DQ785807</td>
<td>84 %</td>
<td>630</td>
<td>2e-177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Fragaria ananassa</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AJ420190</td>
<td>83 %</td>
<td>644</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Populus euramericana</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AB033504</td>
<td>83 %</td>
<td>585</td>
<td>1e-163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 15: <em>Betula pendula</em> mRNA</td>
<td>AK154649</td>
<td>83 %</td>
<td>571</td>
<td>9e-159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 44: <em>MD-AC01</em> mRNA</td>
<td>DQ137848</td>
<td>81 %</td>
<td>571</td>
<td>9e-159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 45: <em>MD-AC01</em> mRNA (ripe fruit cortex)</td>
<td>X61390</td>
<td>81 %</td>
<td>345</td>
<td>7e-94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hit 77: <em>MD-AC02</em> genomic DNA</td>
<td>AF015787</td>
<td>80 %</td>
<td>224</td>
<td>4e-55</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Searched on 27 August, 2006 (E value; refer section 2.2.6.1)
3.1.6.3 Analysis of the Deduced Translational Sequences of Each of the ACC Oxidase Proteins

From a deduced translation of each of the three ACO open reading frames (ORFs), amino acid sequences were aligned and compared (Figure 3.7).

Enzyme activity requires that some specific amino acid residues be conserved. Apple ACO has been observed to require the residues H177, D179 and H234 to bind iron in the active site (Shaw et al., 1996; Kadyrzhanova et al., 1997; 1999), and R244, S246 and T157 as binding sites for the ACC carboxyl group (Kadyrzhanova et al., 1999; Dilley et al., 2003; Seo et al., 2004). Also in apple ACO, the lysine residues K158, K230 or K292 are strongly implicated for ascorbate activation (Kadyrzhanova et al., 1999; Dilley et al., 2003) and residue R175 has been proposed to bind directly to NaHCO3 (Dilley et al., 2003). Eight lysine residues (K72, K144, K158, K172, K199, K230, K292 and K296) observed in apple ACO are conserved in other species (Kadyrzhanova et al., 1997; 1999), and like K158, K230 or K292 the other five lysine residues (K72, K144, K172, K199, K296) may possibly also be involved in ascorbate binding. For apple ACO residues in the C-terminus, E297, R299 and E301 are important for enzyme activity, and particularly R299 which may be involved in the mechanism of CO2 activation (Kadyrzhanova et al., 1999). Also three conserved cysteine residues C28, C133 and C165 have been observed of which the C28 residue only is important for catalysis (Kadyrzhanova et al., 1997; 1999), MD-ACO3 contains a fourth cysteine residue at position 60 (C60).

In other species residues H39, H56, Q78, E80, D83, H94, H211, F250, N252, Y285, Y289 (and from residues E302 and M304 in the C-terminus) are important for ACO catalytic activity (Tayeh et al., 1999; Zhang et al., 1997; Zhang et al., 2004b), and are present in the MD-ACOs. Stabilization of the double stranded beta sheet (DSBS) by residues F31, I184, L186, F187, Q188, L195, L197, V206, V214, V215, V236, F250 and other residues necessary for the stabilisation of the secondary structure of Petunia hybrida ACO are Y57, R64, L68, A79, M84, D83, W86, D219, E222, K279, Y285, L288, F294, K297, R300, M304 (Zhang et al., 2004b), and all of these residues are present in the MD-ACO isoforms.

One of the protein cleavage sites observed by Zhang et al., (2004b) between L186 and F187 is present in all MD-ACO isoforms. However, the second cleavage site between V214 and V215 is absent, but rather the isoleucine residue occurs at position 215 (I215) instead of a valine residue (V214) are observed in the MD-ACOs.

The presence of all of these residues supports the probability that MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 transcripts will encode functional ACOs.
Figure 3.7: Comparison of the Deduced Amino Acid Sequences of the Open Reading Frames of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3.

Amino acids important for apple ACO activity are in bold, and the conserved lysines and cysteines are italicized. Amino acids important for the activity and for the stabilization of the ACO secondary structure in other species, are also indicated.
A phylogenetic tree constructed from an alignment of eighty-five ACO sequences obtained from the NCBI protein database with the deduced amino acid sequences for MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 over the entire open reading frame is shown as Appendix 1A and the full name of each entry as Appendix 1B. As the phylogenetic tree is so large it is convenient to only show the MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 groupings from the tree (Figure 3.8A), and the groupings around MD-ACO3 (Figure 3.8B) separately. Clearly, MD-ACO3 is encoded from a gene distinct as the major splits of the tree are far removed from those of both MD-ACO1 or MD-ACO2 (Appendix 1A). Also there is reasonable evidence that MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are each encoded by distinct genes as they are two splits apart on the tree (Figure 3.8A). MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are grouped with PP-ACO2 (peach fruit, unspecified developmental state), while MD-ACO3 is grouped with PP-ACO1 (from softening, ripening and wounded fruit). Interestingly, PC-ACO1 (European pear) and JP-AOX1 and PP-AOX4 (Asian pear) associate with MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 which are expressed in immature and unripe mature fruit; in contrast to PP-AOX2A, PP-AOX2B and JP-AOX3 (Asian pear) which associate with MD-ACO3 and are expressed in ripe fruit tissue.

3.1.7 Confirmation by Southern Analysis that MD-ACO3 is Encoded by a Gene Distinct from MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2

Prior to Southern analysis of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3, the specificity of these genes as gene-specific probes was examined. This was undertaken because they are similar in nucleotide sequence (Table 3.7), particularly MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 (ORF 93.9 %), and so have the potential to cross-hybridise. Therefore, the probes were designed to include the 3’ terminal end of the ORF and some 3’-UTR (but do not include any restriction sites) and hence advantage was taken of the lower identity between their 3’-UTR sequences (Table 3.7B), as well as the variation in their ORF lengths (Figure 3.7). The MD-ACO1 probe (182 bp) shares a 71.1 % identity with the MD-ACO2 probe (145 bp) with a 135 bp overlap, and shares a 59.1 % identity with the probe for MD-ACO3 (273 bp) with a 257 bp overlap. The MD-ACO3 probe shares 64.4 % identity with the MD-ACO2 probe with a 64 bp overlap. The blots were hybridized with [α-32P]-dATP labelled MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 or MD-ACO3 sequences and then washed at high stringency (0.1 x SSPE, 0.1 % (w/v) SDS at 65 °C). No cross-hybridization was detected between any of the three ACO sequences (Figure 3.9). Such washing conditions were then used in subsequent DNA and RNA blot analysis.

Southern analysis was performed using genomic DNA isolated from Malus domestica (section 2.2.7.1). Firstly, to examine whether the genomic DNA was completely digested (indicated by a smear rather than distinct bands), aliquots (100 ng) of digested genomic DNA were separated on agarose 1 % (w/v) by electrophoresis on a mini gel and visualised by ethidium bromide
A

Results

B
Figure 3.9: Specificity of $MD-ACO1$, $MD-ACO2$ and $MD-ACO3$ as Probes in Blotting Analysis

Each lane contains 50 ng of $MD-ACO1$, $MD-ACO2$ and $MD-ACO3$ cDNA sequences as indicated. The blots were hybridized with $^{32}$P labelled cDNA probes $MD-ACO1$, $MD-ACO2$ and $MD-ACO3$ as indicated, and washed at high stringency (0.1 x SSPE, 0.1 % (w/v) SDS at 65 °C).
staining (Figure 3.10A). As ethidium bromide may interfere with the transfer of DNA from gel to Hybond™-N™ membrane, for Southern analysis, the agarose gels were not stained with ethidium bromide. For Southern analysis aliquots (25 μg) of restriction enzyme digested genomic DNA (section 2.2.7.2), were separated on 0.8 % (w/v) agarose gel by electrophoresis (section 2.2.4.3) at 30 V for 18 h, and then transferred onto the Hybond™-N™ membrane (section 2.2.7.3).

Southern analysis confirmed that MD-ACO3 was encoded by a gene distinct from both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 genes as the hybridization pattern is clearly very distinct (Figure 3.10B). Although the fragment sizes for MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 were similar in the EcoRI, HindIII and XbaI lanes, MD-ACO2 has fewer and less intense bands overall.

Digestion with EcoRI reveals a fragment which strongly hybridises to MD-ACO1 (at ca. 2.5 kb), but appears not to hybridise to MD-ACO2 or MD-ACO3. However, hybridization of both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 to fragments of ca. 5.0 kb and 8.0 kb is observed, and MD-ACO1 also hybridizes to larger fragments of ca. 10.5 kb and 12 kb. Although a number of fragments have lightly hybridised to MD-ACO3, they are rather indistinct smears which descend to approximately 2.9 kb, but predominantly larger fragments (of more than 8 kb). Digestion with HindIII revealed only one fragment which hybridised strongly with MD-ACO2 (of ca. 1.9 kb), compared to two fragments which hybridised strongly with MD-ACO1 (of ca. 1.5 and 1.9 kb), and fragments of ca. 3.3 kb, 5 kb and 6 kb hybridize with MD-ACO3. The MD-ACO3 probe has strongly hybridized to a single fragment cut with XbaI (of ca. 5.1 kb), the MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 hybridization patterns are less distinct. For example, one fragment which hybridised lightly but distinctly with MD-ACO2 of ca. 15 kb, and a number of fragments which hybridised with MD-ACO1 are barely detectable against the smear which descends to approximately 6 kb, nevertheless a fragment of ca. 15 kb is faintly distinguishable. There are other, less intense bands, even at high stringency which may suggest the presence of sequences related but not totally identical to MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3. It should be noted that the probe sequence for all of the MD-ACOs do not contain restriction digestion sites for EcoRI, HindIII or XbaI. Although both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 have HindIII restriction sites at the same site in the third exon (Figure 3.6), MD-ACO2 also has a HindIII site within the first intron, giving a fragment of 630 bp. However, MD-ACO1 has three HindIII restriction sites (Figure 3.6): there is 70 bp between the two HindIII sites within intron two, 130 bp between the downstream HindIII site within intron 2 and the HindIII site within exon 3, making a total of 200 bp between the upstream HindIII site within intron 2 and the HindIII site within exon 3. There are 1,340 bp between EcoRI restriction sites within the MD-ACO1 genomic sequence between intron 2 and the 3'-UTR. The probes for each of the MD-ACOs are specific (Figure 3.9)
Figure 3.10: Southern Analysis of *Malus domestica* Genomic DNA

A. Digested DNA visualised by ethidium bromide staining (mini-gel)

B. Hybridisation pattern of $^{32}$P labelled *MD-ACO1*, $^{32}$P labelled *MD-ACO2*, $^{32}$P labelled *MD-ACO3*. Lane 1: digested with *EcoRI* (E), Lane 2: digested with *HindIII* (H), Lane 3: digested with *Xba I* (X), Lane 4: undigested DNA control (C). Molecular sizes are indicated. FujiFilm Fluoro Image Analyser FLA-5000.
and the same digestion mixture was aliquoted for each of the MD-ACOs for each of the three restriction digestions. Even though Gala apple has 34 chromosomes and the haploid number is 17 (Westwood, 1993), and is thought to be a functional diploid (Korban et al., 2004), it is usually classified as an allopolyploid (Newcomb et al., 2006) or ancient tetraploid, and so allelic forms of the genes may differ. However, the possibility that MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are encoded by distinct genes can not be ruled out, and will be evaluated further in the Discussion section.

3.1.8 Evidence that Three Members of the MD-ACO Multi-gene Family are Differentially Expressed In Vivo.

A Virtual Northern was supplied by Dr Andrew Allen, HortResearch in Auckland, (Figure 3.11), and was compiled from data gathered by HortResearch for the construction of an expressed sequenced tags (ESTs) library. In this analysis EST 179706 and EST 192136 (MD-ACO3) are closely associated with leaf tissue rather than the fruit tissue (fruit stored @ 0.5 °C for 24 h), EST 153710 (MD-ACO2) is expressed in the fruit tissue and spur buds, while MD-ACO1 (clone pAP4) is expressed only in fruit tissue in this data set.

**Figure 3.11: Virtual Northern: The Cultivar and Tissue Type from which the MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 EST Sequences were Generated and Days After Full Bloom (DAFB) is also indicated.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>cDNA sequence</th>
<th>Cultivar and tissue type from which the RNA was extracted.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>EST 179706</td>
<td>Gala seedling leaves infected with Venturia inaequalis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(MD-ACO3)</td>
<td>Gala pre-opened vegetative bud</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EST 192136</td>
<td>Gala fruit stored @ 0.5°C for 24 h</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(MD-ACO3)</td>
<td>Gala seedling leaves infected with Venturia inaequalis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pinkie expanding leaf</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gala partially senescing leaf</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EST 153710</td>
<td>Apple fruit cortex, tree ripened fruit 150 DAFB</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(MD-ACO2)</td>
<td>Apple skin peel, tree ripened fruit 150 DAFB</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gala 126 DAFB fruit cortex</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Spur buds from OFF Pacific Rose trees</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gala fruit stored for 24 h under low oxygen/high CO2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clone pAP4 cDNA</td>
<td>Gala fruit stored for 24h under low oxygen/high CO2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(MD-ACO1)</td>
<td>Apple fruit cortex, tree ripened fruit 150 DAFB</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Apple skin peel, tree ripened fruit 150 DAFB</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gala 126 DAFB fruit cortex</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
To ascertain in which apple tissue \textit{MD-ACO1}, \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3} were transcribed, RNA was extracted (section 2.2.2.1) from the tissue of initial leaf (collected on 15.10.03), mature fully expanded leaf (collected on 07.04.04), young fruit (~2 cm diameter, collected on 16.12.03) and mature fruit (collected on 23.02.04). An RT reaction using an oligo d(T)\textsubscript{15} primer generated cDNA was used as template, followed by a 30 cycle PCR amplification at an annealing temperature of 55 °C, using gene-specific primers (refer Table 2.2) for the putative \textit{MD-ACO1} \textit{[pProEx-1(MD1F) and pProEx-1(MD1R)]}, \textit{MD-ACO2} \textit{[pProEx-1(MD2F) and pProEx-1(MD2R)]}, and \textit{MD-ACO3} \textit{[pProEx-1(MD3F) and pProEx-1(MD3R)]}. Fragments generated by RT-PCR were separated by agarose gel electrophoresis (section 2.2.4.3) and visualised using ethidium bromide staining (Figure 3.12).

Using this degree of sensitivity, \textit{MD-ACO1}, \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3} appear to have different expression patterns \textit{in vivo}. Primers specific for \textit{MD-ACO1} amplified products from mature apple fruit tissue (Figure 3.12), and less intensely from young apple fruit tissue. In contrast, primers specific for \textit{MD-ACO2} amplified products from each apple tissue examined, young leaf, mature leaf, young fruit and mature fruit, while \textit{MD-ACO3} gene specific primers amplified products from all tissues but less intensely from mature fruit.

Primers were designed to generate PCR produces, to be used in relative quantitative RT-PCR (section 2.2.3.4), and as targets for the hybridization of probes in cDNA Southern blot analysis (sections 2.2.7.4, 2.2.7.5 and 2.2.7.6). Primers were designed in such a way as to span the second intron-exon boundaries of the target mRNA (Table 2.2), and thus prevent amplification of the target region from any contaminating genomic DNA that may be present in the template RNA. Although any PCR product so produced would probably be distinguishable by its larger size, such a control reduces ambiguity and leaves all of the reaction mixture available for amplification of the RNA template.

Semi-quantitative RT-PCR (section 2.2.3.4) was used to examine the variation in the abundance of \textit{MD-ACO1}, \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3} transcripts in apple tissue from young leaf, mature leaf, young fruit and mature fruit. Random primers were used to generate cDNA from total RNA extracts and particular care was taken to ensure that the amount of RNA used in each of the RT reactions was exactly the same, thus allowing a comparison to be made across the different apple tissues. Since the expression of ribosomal RNA is invariant, it can provide a credible quantitative internal control. \textit{MD-ACO} fragments were then amplified in one PCR round of 25 cycles at an annealing temperature of 55 °C, using gene-specific forward primers \textit{MD-ACO1}, Md1(rtpcr)intron2/F; \textit{MD-ACO2}, Md2(rtpcr)intron2/F and \textit{MD-ACO3}, Md3 (rtpcr)intron2/F (Table 2.2) which span the exon-intron boundaries of the second intron and
### Figure 3.12: Evidence that MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 are Expressed Differentially In Vivo.

Fragments were generated by RT-PCR, using an oligo d(T)15 primer for the RT reaction and gene-specific primers (as indicated) for thirty PCR cycles at an annealing temperature of 55 °C, and visualised using ethidium bromide staining. Lane 1: young leaf, Lane 2: mature leaf, Lane 3: young fruit, Lane 4 mature fruit. Primers used MD-ACO1, pProEx-1(MD1F) and pProEx-1(MD1R); MD-ACO2, pProEx-1(MD2F)and pProEx-1(MD2R), and MD-ACO3, pProEx-1(MD3F) and pProEx-1(MD3R).
gene-specific reverse primers (MD-ACO1, Md1 3'-UTR;  MD-ACO2, Md2 3'-UTR and MD-ACO3, Md3 3'-UTR; Table 2.2)(Figure 3.13). Primers were used at a final concentration of 400 nM (section 2.2.3.2), as well as a mixture of a 1:4 ratio of 18S rRNA primers : competimers (section 2.2.3.4) at a final concentration of 800 nM in the standard PCR reaction mixture.

Quantitative analysis of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 gene expression is shown as Figure 3.14, and the amplification products of the expected sizes are indicated for ribosomal RNA (315 bp), MD-ACO1 (800 bp), MD-ACO2 (790 bp) and MD-ACO3 (800 bp). Primers specific for MD-ACO1 amplified products from mature apple fruit tissue (Figure 3.14), and less intensely from young apple fruit tissue, with no visible band for either young or mature green leaf tissue. By contrast, primers specific for MD-ACO2 amplified products from each apple tissue, but with a greater intensity in the fruit tissue whilst MD-ACO3 gene specific primers amplified products in all tissues, although less intensely in tissue from mature fruit.

A decision was made to further investigate the gene expression of Malus domestica using cDNA Southern blot analysis and X-ray film imaging. Southern blot analysis is very sensitive, and allows the use of fewer PCR cycles to ensure that each reaction is compared on the linear part of the curve in terms of rate of amplification.

An RT reaction using an oligo d(T)_{15} primer (rather than random primers necessary for relative quantitative RT-PCR when using the S18 ribosomal controls) was used to generate cDNA from total RNA extracted from young leaf, mature leaf, young fruit and mature fruit, and was followed by two PCR amplification rounds of 20 cycles each, at an annealing temperature of 55 °C, using the forward degenerate primer (Degen.F.South; Table 2.2) and gene-specific 3'-UTR primers (Md1 3'-UTR, Md2 3'-UTR and Md3 3'-UTR; Table 2.2)(data not shown). DNA sequencing confirmed the sequences (ca. 815 bp) to be ACO. Originally it was intended to use degenerate primers for the cDNA Southern analysis so that exactly the same cDNA mixture can be challenged by each individual probe sequence of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 (Table 2.2) in separate hybridization reactions, and also since only one set of primers is used, any variability amongst primers is controlled for. However, a true degenerate reverse primer could not be developed in the 3'-UTR due to the lack of conserved regions between all three MD-ACO genes, and multiple T nucleotides serve as a poor primer (Frohman et al., 1988), so a semi-degenerate primer was made up of a mixture of the same three gene-specific reverse primers (Md1 3'-UTR, Md2 3'-UTR and Md3 3'-UTR; Table 2.2) used in Figure 3.14. The reverse primer concentration in each PCR reaction mixture was the usual ca. 400 nM (section 2.2.3.2).
Figure 3.13: The position of the forward intron spanning primers of *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3*, the forward position of the probe primers, and the reverse 3′-UTR primers used for both fragments and probes.

The boxes indicate the exon sequences and the numbers represent DNA sequence length in base pairs. The lines between the boxes represent the intron sequences, and the numbers indicate DNA. Introns spanning forward primers are indicated, the primer sequence on the second exon is length in base pairs continuous with the sequence on the third exon so that the entire second intron sequence is completely excluded. The reverse primers are in the 3′-UTR and run into the fourth exon. The forward primers for the probes are also indicated. For the nucleotide sequences refer to Table 2.2.
Figure 3.14: Relative Quantitative RT-PCR Analysis of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 Differential Expression In Vivo.

Lane 1: 1Kb DNA ladder (Gibco BRL), Lanes 2, 6 and 10: RNA extracted from young leaf tissue, Lanes 3, 7 and 11: RNA extracted from mature leaf tissue, Lanes 4, 8 and 12: RNA extracted from young fruit tissue, Lanes 5, 9 and 13: RNA extracted from mature fruit tissue. Two of the DNA standards are indicated on the left of the figure. The approximate size of the amplification products are indicated by arrows to the right of the figure (18S ribosomal RNA ca. 315 bp; putative MD-ACOs ca. 790 to 800 bp), and visualized using ethidium bromide staining.
cDNA was generated from total RNA extracted from young leaf, mature leaf, young fruit and mature fruit by an RT reaction using an oligo d(T)$_{15}$ primer. Twenty PCR cycles were used to amplify the fragments of interest using the degenerate forward primer Degen.F.South (Table 2.2) and the semi-degenerate reverse primer, at an annealing temperature of 55 °C. As DNA hybridization is much more sensitive than ethidium bromide staining, one PCR amplification round was used and 20 or 30 PCR cycles. Universal actin primers were used as a control. Aliquots (15 µL) of cDNA from each tissue were separated on 1 % (w/v) agarose on three separate mini-gels by electrophoresis at 80 V (section 2.2.4.3) for ca. 1 h 30 min, and the fragments then transferred on to the Hybond™-N+ membrane (section 2.2.7.4). Triplicate blots containing the same cDNA mixtures from apple tissue (young leaf, mature leaf, young fruit and mature fruit) were probed with [α-$^{32}$P]-dATP labelled MD-AeO1, MD-AeO2 or MD-AeO3 sequences and then washed at high stringency.

MD-AeO1, MD-AeO2 and MD-AeO3 are differentially expressed as confirmed by cDNA Southern analysis (Figure 3.15). MD-AeO1 appears to be specific to the fruit tissue as no MD-AeO1 transcript was detected in the leaves. MD-AeO2 and MD-AeO3 are expressed in all tissue, but for MD-AeO2 the bands are more intense in fruit tissue, whilst for MD-AeO3 the bands are more intense in the leaf tissue. The expression data (Figures 3.12, 3.14 and 3.15) reflects the virtual northern data (refer Figure 3.11), in that MD-AeO1 is expressed in apple fruit tissue and is not detected in leaf tissue. MD-AeO2 and MD-AeO3 are expressed in both leaf and fruit tissue, but whereas MD-AeO2 is more abundant in fruit tissue, MD-AeO3 is expressed predominantly in leaf tissue.

In summary, therefore, the semi-quantitative RT-PCR analysis (Figure 3.14) and the cDNA Southern analysis (Figure 3.15) confirm the following differential expression patterns. MD-AeO1 occurs predominantly in mature fruit tissue with some expression in young fruit tissue. MD-AeO2 occurs predominantly in fruit tissue but also in leaf tissue. MD-AeO3 occurs predominantly in young leaf tissue but also in fruit tissue.
Figure 3.15: Confirmation that *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3* are Differentially Expressed *In Vivo* using cDNA Southern Analysis.

Fragments generated by RT-PCR, using an oligo d(T)15 primer for the RT reaction and degenerate primers, for either one round of 20 PCR cycles, or one round of 30 PCR cycles (as indicated). Hybridisation of $^{32}$P labelled *MD-ACO1*, $^{32}$P labelled *MD-ACO2*, $^{32}$P labelled *MD-ACO3* are indicated. Lane 1: young green leaf, Lane 2: mature green leaf, Lane 3: young fruit and Lane 4: mature fruit. Fragment sizes are ca. 790 to 800 bp. Kodak Xar-6 X-ray film and developed in an automatic X-ray film processor.
3.2 Expression and Characterization of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 as Recombinant Proteins

3.2.1 Protein Expression of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO3 and MD-ACO3

3.2.1.1 Expression of Recombinant Protein in E. Coli

The open reading frame (ORF) sequences were directionally cloned into the pGEX expression vector (Figure 2.3) using gene-specific primers designed to incorporated restriction enzyme sites (Table 2.2). Primers used to select the ORF from the pAP4 plasmid template contained the EcoRI restriction site in the forward primer and the SalI restriction site in the reverse primer (had already been cloned in the McManus lab). Primers used to select the putative MD-ACO2 ORF from the plasmid template (EST 120223) contained the EcoRI restriction site in the forward primer and the SalI restriction site in the reverse primer. Primers used to select the ORF from the putative MD-ACO3 ORF (EST 192136 and 179706) plasmid template contained the BamH1 restriction site in the forward primer and the XhoI restriction site in the reverse primer. Following one round of PCR amplification, the fragments were separated on 1% (w/v) agarose gel and visualized with ethidium bromide (data not shown). Each of the cDNA fragments contains the ORF (MD-AeO1, 942 bp; MD-AeO2, 990 bp and MD-AeO3, 966 bp), plus the extra nucleotides comprising the cap, the restriction site and any additional nucleotides necessary to ensure the first ATG codon (encoding methionine) is in-frame, to give final PCR product sizes for MD-AeO1 of 972 bp, MD-AeO2 of 1,017 bp and MD-AeO3 of 993 bp.

The ORFs of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 were expressed as a translational fusion with glutathione-S-transferase (GST) in E. coli (initially strain DH5a and then strain BL-21) using the pGEX expression vector. Following cleavage of GST from the recombinant protein, using PreScission™ Protease (Amersham Pharmacia), the protein was examined using either SDS-PAGE stained with coomassie or transferred to a membrane for western analysis. A comparison of each of the three MD-ACO proteins is shown as Figure 3.16. The gene products of MD-ACO1 (35.84 kDa) and MD-ACO2 (37.99 kDa) are migrating as expected. However, the (putative) MD-ACO3 (encoded from EST 192136 and 179706) appears to have a lower molecular mass which is inconsistent with the expected weight determined by the sequence of amino acids between the PreScission Protease cleavage site and the stop codon of 36.8 kDa (refer Table 3.9). Also inconsistent with autocleavage between lysine at position 186 and phenylalalnine at position 187 (Zhang et al., 2004b), which would be expected to generate fragments of 26.2 kDa and 10.60 kDa.
Results

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>MD-ACO1</th>
<th>MD-ACO2</th>
<th>MD-ACO3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>108 kDa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>90 kDa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>90 kDa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>50.7 kDa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>35.5 kDa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>37.99 kDa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>35.84 kDa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>28.6 kDa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>21.2 kDa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Figure 3.16: MD-ACO1, (Putative) MD-ACO2 and (Putative) MD-ACO3 Expressed in E. coli (strain BL-21) using the pGEX Expression Vector.

Recombinant proteins were separated using SDS-PAGE and stained with coomassie brilliant blue. Each lane was loaded with 4 μg of protein. Lane 1: Calibrated low range molecular weight marker (BioRad), Lanes 2 and 3: recombinant MD-ACO1 (35.84 kDa), Lanes 4 and 5: putative recombinant MD-ACO2 (37.99 kDa), Lanes 6 and 7: putative recombinant MD-ACO3 (ca. 33 kDa). The mass of each protein as indicated on the right of the figure are calculated from the translated sequence.
Table 3.9: A Comparison of MD-ACO1, (Putative) MD-ACO2 and (Putative) MD-ACO3: including number of base-pairs, number of amino acids, protein mass and theoretical pI.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>MD-ACO1</th>
<th>MD-ACO2</th>
<th>MD-ACO3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Base-pairs (bp)</td>
<td>942</td>
<td>990</td>
<td>966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amino acids (aa)</td>
<td>314</td>
<td>330</td>
<td>322</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Molecular mass (kDa)</td>
<td>35.35</td>
<td>37.50</td>
<td>36.314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pI (theoretical)</td>
<td>5.24</td>
<td>5.52</td>
<td>5.28</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Modified Molecular Masses**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Modified Mass</th>
<th>pGEX kDa</th>
<th>pProEX-1 kDa</th>
<th>His-tag removed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(+4 or +7 aa)</td>
<td>35.84</td>
<td>37.99</td>
<td>36.797</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(+24 aa)</td>
<td>38.53</td>
<td>40.39</td>
<td>39.263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(+3 aa)</td>
<td>36.47</td>
<td>38.65</td>
<td>37.71</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 have 7 extra amino acids (from the EcoRI site in the MCS), and MD-ACO3 has 4 extra amino acids (from the BamHI site in the MCS).

MD-ACO1 is not deemed ‘putative’ as validation of the amino acid sequence or an MD-ACO had been confirmed previously by sequencing the protein (McManus and Scott pers comm.). Similarly, the MD-ACO2 protein was sequenced and found to have the N-terminal sequence MATFVVDMMD which distinguishes the sequence from the MD-ACO1 amino acid sequence of MATFPVVDMDS (refer Figure 3.7). Further, the predicted masses of MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 do differ (Table 3.9) and the recombinant proteins did differ in mass after separation using SDS-PAGE (Figure 3.16). Therefore, there is good evidence that MD-ACO2 is the gene product of MD-ACO2. To clarify the discrepancy in molecular mass, the < 36.8 kDa MD-ACO3 protein was also prepared for amino acid N-terminal sequence analysis (section 2.3.11.4) on PVDF membrane, stained with coomassie brilliant blue (data not shown), and sent to the Protein Microchemistry Facility of the Department of Biochemistry at Otago University. The N-terminal amino acid sequence M E N F P V I N L E was confirmed and is in agreement with the deduced amino acid sequence for MD-ACO3 (Figure 3.7). This suggests firstly that MD-ACO3 is the gene product of MD-ACO3 (and therefore the 'putative' term can be dispensed with) and also that the truncation of MD-ACO3 was not within the N-terminal region of the protein. Since studies have shown that truncation of the carboxyl end of ACO results in loss of enzymatic activity (Zhang et al., 2004b), and the enzyme is prone to fragmentation and backbone auto-cleavage (Zhang et al., 1997), an activity assay of each of the MD-ACOs was undertaken in order to support the hypothesis that the MD-ACO3 was truncated at the carboxyl terminus. After expression in pGEX, both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are active.
(refer Figure 3.17), whereas the MD-ACO3 is clearly inactive which may suggest polypeptide chain cleavage within the C-terminus domain.

As a consequence of the apparent MD-ACO3 truncation in the pGEX vector, the MD-ACO3 ORF sequence was directionally cloned into the pProEX-1 expression vector (Figure 2.4) using gene-specific primers designed with restriction enzyme sites (Table 2.2). A comparison of the molecular mass of MD-ACO3 expressed in *E. coli* (strain BL-21) using the pGEX vector, with a preliminary induction (section 2.3.1) of recombinant MD-ACO3 expressed in *E. coli* (strain BL-21) using the pProEX-1 vector is shown as Figure 3.18. Aliquots (7 μg) of recombinant protein were separated using a 10 to 20 % gradient gel (section 2.3.10.2), and MD-ACO3 expressed in the pGEX vector is estimated to be ca. 33 kDa (Figure 3.18, Lane 2). Since the gene product of *MD-ACO3*, expressed using the pProEX-1 vector (Figure 3.18, Lane 3 uninduced and Lane 4 induced with IPTG) is now migrating as expected (39.3 kDa), it was decided that the ORF sequences of *MD-ACO1* and *MD-ACO2* should also be cloned into the pProEX-1 expression vector. For comparative kinetic analysis of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3, the expression of all three enzymes in the same expression system is necessary to control for any variation there may be in enzyme activity due to the different expression vector systems.

### 3.2.1.2 Purification of His-Tagged Fusion Proteins

MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 expressed in *E. coli* (strain BL-21), using the pProEX-1 vector, were separated from bacterial protein contaminants by metal chelate chromatography (section 2.3.4). Following SDS-PAGE and coomassie staining or western blot analysis, bands of the expected mass were detected for MD-ACO1 (38.53 kDa), for MD-ACO2 (40.39 kDa) and for MD-ACO3 (39.26 kDa) (asterisks in Figure 3.19).

However, significant unexpected bands were also detected by coomassie staining and by Western blot analysis. An ACO assay was undertaken for each of the three MD-ACOs of the expected mass, together with the unexpected lower mass proteins that were also recognised by the MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO3 antibodies (see section 3.2.2) (▲ in Figure 3.19) after these were separated using Mono-Q anion exchange chromatography (see Figure 3.20). Ethylene measurement by gas chromatography determined all three MD-ACO proteins of the expected mass to be active. In contrast the lower molecular mass proteins were inactive. As more intense staining of the non active ca. 36 kDa protein occurs for MD-ACO3 than for either MD-ACO1 or MD-ACO2 (Figure 3.19) N-terminal amino acid sequencing of this protein was performed. A sequence of ME N F P V I N L was obtained which aligns with the N-terminus of MD-ACO3 thereby confirming the sequence to be MD-ACO3, and suggesting that the
Ethylene evolution was determined by gas chromatography in parts per million (ppm), and converted to nmol mg$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$ from which the specific activities of each enzyme were calculated. The standard ACO assay reaction mixture was used. The specific activity of the MD-ACO3 expressed in the pProEX-1 expression vector (Figure 2.4) is also included as a comparison. Values and means $\pm$ SE ($n = 6$).
Figure 3.18: Comparison of the Molecular Mass of Recombinant MD-ACO3 Expressed using the pGEX Vector with MD-ACO3 Expressed using the pProEX-1 Vector, after Separation on a 10 to 20 % SDS-PAGE Gradient Gel.

Aliquots (7 μg) of recombinant protein were separated using the gradient gel SDS-PAGE system. Lane 1: Calibrated low range molecular weight marker (BioRad), Lane 2: MD-ACO3 expressed in E. coli using pGEX, Lane 3: uninduced MD-ACO3 expressed in E. coli using pProEX-1, Lane 4: induced MD-ACO3 expressed with IPTG in E. coli using pProEX-1. The estimated molecular weights of MD-ACO3 are indicated to the right.
**Results**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>kDa</th>
<th>108</th>
<th>90</th>
<th>50.7</th>
<th>35.5</th>
<th>28.6</th>
<th>21.2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO1</td>
<td>(i)</td>
<td>(ii)</td>
<td>E. coli nickel</td>
<td>chelating proteins</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>kDa</th>
<th>103.8</th>
<th>81.1</th>
<th>47.7</th>
<th>35.8</th>
<th>27.1</th>
<th>19.3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO2</td>
<td>(i)</td>
<td>(ii)</td>
<td>E. coli nickel</td>
<td>chelating proteins</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>kDa</th>
<th>113</th>
<th>92</th>
<th>52.3</th>
<th>35.3</th>
<th>28.7</th>
<th>21.3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO3</td>
<td>(i)</td>
<td>(ii)</td>
<td>E. coli nickel</td>
<td>chelating proteins</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Western analysis**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>kDa</th>
<th>108</th>
<th>90</th>
<th>50.7</th>
<th>35.5</th>
<th>28.6</th>
<th>21.2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO1</td>
<td>*Active MD-ACO1</td>
<td>Inactive protein</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>kDa</th>
<th>103.8</th>
<th>81.1</th>
<th>47.7</th>
<th>35.8</th>
<th>27.1</th>
<th>19.3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO2</td>
<td>*Active MD-ACO2</td>
<td>Inactive protein</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>kDa</th>
<th>113</th>
<th>92</th>
<th>52.3</th>
<th>35.3</th>
<th>28.7</th>
<th>21.3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO3</td>
<td>*Active MD-ACO3</td>
<td>Inactive MD-ACO3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Figure 3.19: SDS-PAGE of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 Following Metal Chelate Chromatography.**

For coomassie staining each lane contains 4 μg of protein and for western analysis each lane contains 0.4 μg of protein. The calibrated low molecular weight marker is shown and the nickel chelating E. coli proteins as well as the active and inactive MD-ACO fragments are indicated. The separated MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 recombinant proteins were challenged with the anti-MD-ACO1 antibody. The separated MD-ACO3 recombinant protein was challenged with anti-MD-ACO3 antibody.
truncation occurred again through the C-terminal domain. The reason for this apparent degradation of MD-ACO3 in particular is unclear, even though all three isoforms contain an autocleavage site (between L\textsuperscript{186} and F\textsuperscript{187}; Zhang \textit{et al.}, 2004b). Such a cleavage would leave recombinant MD-ACO3 fragments of \textit{ca.} 26.2 kDa and \textit{ca.} 10.60 kDa, and although there are some bands at approximately \textit{ca.} 26.2 kDa, fragmentation appears to occur predominantly at \textit{ca.} 36 kDa.

Following N-terminal amino acid sequencing of the higher mass bands (\textit{ca.} \geq 45 kDa) visible on the coomassie stained gels and undetectable by western analysis (Figure 3.19) the proteins were determined to be the nickel chelating \textit{E. coli} proteins, succinylornithine transaminase (i) and glucosamine-fructose-6-phosphate aminotransferase (ii).

As indicated previously the recombinant proteins were to be used for kinetic analysis and so it was necessary to separate the active protein from the inactive protein fragments using fast protein liquid chromatography (FPLC). Following desalting through a G-25 packed column (section 2.3.5), the MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 samples were individually injected onto a Mono Q column using the FPLC (section 2.3.6) under exactly the same conditions, using the same buffers and salt gradient at pH 7.5. The Bradford Protein assay (section 2.3.7) was used to determine which fractions contained protein (Figure 3.20 A, B and C). In order to ascertain which fractions contained active recombinant ACO, and whether the inactive MD-ACO protein fragments had been successfully separated, western blot analysis was used. Further, to determine whether the nickel chelating contaminants had also been separated from the active ACO, the acrylamide gels were stained with coomassie following SDS-PAGE. Protein concentrations were determined from a standard equation (section 2.3.7), and then diluted ten fold to give 0.4 \mu g of protein per lane for the western blot analyses and 4 \mu g per lane of protein for the coomassie stained acrylamide gels (data not shown).

Active recombinant ACO began to elute from the anion exchange column at a slightly different salt concentration for each isoform. For example, MD-ACO1 began eluting at 180 mM of NaCl (collected in fraction 19; Figure 3.20A), MD-ACO2 began eluting at 210 mM of NaCl (collected in fraction 22; Figure 3.20B), and MD-ACO3 began eluting at 190 mM of NaCl, (collected in fraction 20; Figure 3.20C). All three of the MD-ACO proteins were eluted within a linear salt gradient representing a NaCl concentration change of 0 to 1M NaCl over 60 min (under exactly the same conditions, i.e. buffers and FPLC programme). The NaCl concentration at which MD-ACO1 (180 mM), MD-ACO2 (210 mM) and MD-ACO3 (190 mM) eluted from the Mono Q column is compared in Table 3.10 with the estimated isoelectric point (pI; ExPASy) of each of the \textit{Malus domestica} ACO isoforms.
Results

--- absorbance (595 nm) - NaCl (mM) gradient

A

B

C
Table 3.10: NaCl Concentration at which MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 Elute from the Mono Q Column at pH 7.5, Compared with the Estimated pI of Each of the Proteins:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>NaCl (mM)</th>
<th>Theoretical pI</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO1</td>
<td>180-210</td>
<td>5.24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO2</td>
<td>210-240</td>
<td>5.52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MD-ACO3</td>
<td>190-220</td>
<td>5.28</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Fractions containing the separated active recombinant ACO were used for subsequent kinetic analysis (Figure 3.21).

3.2.2 Characterization of Polyclonal Antibodies Raised Against MD-ACO Fusion Proteins

Initially, polyclonal IgG antibodies raised against MD-ACO1 (translational product of pAP4; Ross et al., 1992) were used for western blot analysis to examine whether they would recognise the ACO protein in apple fruit and leaf tissue. Proteins from apple fruit showed strong recognition at a molecular mass of ca. 35.8 kDa (lanes 3, 4 and 5; Figure 3.22) following ACO extraction using 1% (v/v) Triton. In contrast, only a barely perceptible band appeared in mature fully expanded green leaf tissue extracts (lane 1; Figure 3.22) and senescent leaf tissue extracts (lane 2; Figure 3.22). Further western blot analysis using only apple leaf samples (initial leaf, mature fully expanded green leaf and senescent leaf tissue) showed antibody recognition at higher weights after over 30 min of development time, and bands were imperceptible at 35.35 kDa (data not shown). These results suggested either that the antibodies raised against MD-ACO1 (translational product of pAP4; Ross et al., 1992) were best at recognising this isoform, and that the ACO isoform(s) in leaf tissue were distinct MD-ACO proteins, or that the MD-ACO1 was expressed at very low levels in apple leaf tissue.

Antibodies were also raised in this thesis against the recombinant MD-ACO3 isoform (refer section 2.3.11.1) and used for western blot analysis to examine whether they would recognise the ACO protein in apple leaf tissue. Apple leaf samples (Lanes 4, 5 and 6; Figure 3.23) showed antibody recognition at the expected weight of MD-ACO3 (36.3 kDa), and also apple fruit samples (Lanes 7 and 8; Figure 3.23) showed antibody recognition but at a slightly lower molecular mass. This is not unexpected as climacteric apple fruit is known to accumulate a great abundance of ACO (Dong et al., 1992; Dilley et al., 1993), and hence the MD-ACO3
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>kDa</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>103.7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>81.1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47.7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35.8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27.1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19.3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Figure 3.21: Recombinant His-tagged Proteins after Purification by Metal Chelate Affinity Chromatography, Sephadex G-25 and Anion Exchange Chromatography.

Apple recombinant ACC oxidase fractions used for kinetic analysis. SDS-PAGE stained with coomassie brilliant blue. Each lane contains 4 μg of protein. Lane 1: Calibrated low range molecular weight marker (BioRad), Lane 2: recombinant MD-ACO1 from fraction 20, Lane 3: recombinant MD-ACO2 from fraction 19, Lane 4: recombinant MD-ACO3 from fraction 22 (refer Figure 3.20).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Lanes</th>
<th>Leaf</th>
<th>Fruit</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

10 μg of protein was loaded per well and ACC oxidase was detected using antibody raised against recombinant MD-ACO1 in rabbit, and then using an anti-goat secondary antibody conjugated to alkaline phosphatase. Lane 1. Mature fully expanded green leaf tissue; Lane 2. Senescent leaf tissue; Lane 3. Fruit supernatant; Lane 4. Fruit pellet; Lane 5. Fruit pellet extracted using 1% Triton (v/v); Lane 6. SDS-PAGE (low range) standards.
Figure 3.23: Detection, using Western Analysis, of ACC Oxidase in Apple Fruit and Apple Leaves by an Antibody Raised Against MD-ACO3

Lane 1: Recombinant MD-ACO3 (5.0 μg of protein per well), Lane 2: Recombinant MD-ACO3 (2.5 μg of protein per well), Lane 3: SDS-PAGE (low range) standards, Lane 4: Leaf tissue (extracted in 0.1 % Triton and 2 mM DTT) (10 μg of protein per well), Lane 5: Leaf tissue (extracted in 1.0 % Triton) (10 μg of protein per well), Lane 6: Leaf tissue (extracted in 10 mM DTT) (10 μg of protein per well), Lane 7: Fruit tissue (extracted in 0.5 % Triton) (10 μg of protein per well), Lane 8: Fruit tissue (extracted in 1.0 % Triton) (10 μg of protein per well).
antibody may also be recognising a MD-ACO isoform of a lower molecular mass in the fruit tissue. Antibodies were not raised against the recombinant MD-ACO2 isoform as the MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 isoforms are relatively similar in terms of amino acid sequence and it was considered that any accumulation of MD-ACO2 protein would be recognised by the antibody raised against the MD-ACO1 isoform. The cross-reactivity of the MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO3 antibodies was examined using recombinant proteins. At high concentrations of separated recombinant protein, both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO3 antibodies did cross-react and recognise MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3. To produce antibodies that could discriminate between these two isoforms, either monoclonal antibodies are necessary or polyclonal antibodies produced to specific peptides. Both of these approaches were outside the scope of this thesis.

3.2.2.1 Protein Accumulation of MD-ACO1/MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 in Apple Tissue

In order to confirm the accumulation pattern of the MD-ACO isoforms as determined by the antibodies available, ACO was extracted (section 2.1.4) from the following apple tissues using 1 % (v/v) Triton: initial apple leaf (collected on 16.12.03), mature fully expanded apple leaf (collected on 07.04.04), young fruit (~ 2 cm diameter, collected on 16.12.03) and mature fruit (collected on 23.02.04). Aliquots of apple tissue extract containing 20 μg of protein were examined by western analysis (section 2.3.11) using antibodies raised against the gene products of MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO3 (refer section 2.3.11.1). The results indicate that in apple, the accumulation of ACO is tissue specific (Figure 3.24). Antibodies raised against MD-ACO1 recognise protein predominantly in the mature apple fruit extract (Figure 3.24A; lane 3), while antibodies raised against MD-ACO3 recognise protein predominantly in young leaf tissue (Figure 3.24B, Lane 4), and also in young fruit and mature leaf tissue (Figure 3.24B, Lanes 2 and 5).

3.2.2.2 Protein Analysis: Removal of the His-Tag

Prior to kinetic analysis of the three apple ACOs, an experiment to determine the effect of His-tag removal on recombinant MD-ACO2 and recombinant MD-ACO3 activity was undertaken (Figure 3.25). The extra 24 amino acids comprising the hexahistidine tag, spacer region and the TEV protease cutting site was removed using TEV protease (refer section 2.3.4.2), leaving only 3 additional amino acids on the N-terminal end of the proteins. Although TEV protease is maximally active at 34 °C and typically overnight, Nallamsetty et al. (2004) recommend performing the digest at room temperature (20 °C) or 4 °C overnight. TEV protease is only three-fold less active at 4 °C than at 20 °C (Nallamsetty et al., 2004), but given the well
Figure 3.24: Accumulation of MD-ACO1/MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 in Various Tissues of Apple.

Western blot analysis using antibodies raised against MD-ACO1 (A) and antibodies raised against MD-ACO3 (B). Lane 1: Prestained low range molecular markers (Bio-Rad), Lane 2: young fruit tissue, Lane 3: mature fruit tissue, Lane 4: young leaf tissue, Lane 5: mature leaf tissue. All tissue samples were extracted in 1% (v/v) Triton.
Figure 3.25: Cleavage of the Histidine Tag from Recombinant MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 using Tobacco Etch Virus (TEV) Protease, and Subsequent Evaluation of Enzymatic Activity

(A) SDS-PAGE stained with coomassie brilliant blue. Aliquots of ca. 5 μg of sample per lane. Lane 1: Calibrated low range molecular weight marker (BioRad), Lane 2: MD-AC02 uncleaved control (expected molecular mass ca. 40.39 kDa), Lane 3: MD-AC02 cleaved with TEV protease (expected molecular mass ca. 39.26 kDa), Lane 4: MD-AC03 uncleaved control (ca. 40.39 kDa) Lane 5: MD-AC03 cleaved with TEV protease (ca. 37.71 kDa). (B) Recombinant MD-AC03 activity prior to the removal of the histidine-tag or after cleavage of the histidine tag (ACO activity is expressed in ppm as indicated).
published instability of ACO (Poneleit and Dilley, 1992; Pirrung et al., 1993; Dupille et al., 1993) the digestion was incubated at 4 °C overnight. Samples separated by SDS-PAGE and stained using coomassie brilliant blue (Figure 3.25A) indicate the digestion went to completion, as both the uncleaved His-tag controls of recombinant MD-AC02 (ca. 40.39 kDa) and recombinant MD-AC03 (ca. 39.3 kDa) as well as the TEV protease cleaved recombinant MD-AC02 (ca. 38.65 kDa) and recombinant MD-AC03 (ca. 37.71 kDa) separate to the expected molecular mass (Table 3.9).

Fragmentation of the proteins incubated at 4 °C with TEV protease is apparent compared to the untreated controls (Figure 3.25A). An ACO activity assay was then undertaken to determine whether the enzymatic activity of MD-AC03 was changed as a result of His-tag removal. Compared to the uncleaved His-tag fusion MD-AC03 control, the His-tag cleaved MD-AC03 was determined to be 80 % less active (Figure 3.25B). As the enzymatic activity is compromised kinetic analysis was therefore undertaken without the removal of the His-tags.

3.2.3 Kinetic Properties of MD-AC01, MD-AC02 and MD-AC03

3.2.3.1 Optimal Substrate and Co-factor Requirements for MD-ACO Activity

An investigation into the kinetic parameters of each of the recombinant ACO isoforms in Malus domestica was undertaken to compare any possible differences that may exist between the activities of the enzymes under different ACO assay conditions. These may in turn reflect the physiological conditions under which each of the isoforms is optimally active, and thus give some indication as to their possible physiological role(s)/function(s) in the plant. Each of the experiments was performed in triplicate, for each of the isoforms, and the same experiment for all three isoforms was conducted on the same day, in parallel, under exactly the same experimental conditions where appropriate.

Prior to a detailed analysis of the co-substrate and co-factor requirements, the reaction rates (nmol min\(^{-1}\)) of each of the enzymes was examined as a function of the amount of enzyme used in the ACO assay (section 2.3.8). The maximum velocity (\(V_{\text{max}}\)) of each of the MD-ACO isoforms increased as the amount of enzyme increased (Figure 3.26). MD-AC01 (5 \(\mu\)g = \(V_{\text{max}}\) 0.073 nmol min\(^{-1}\), and 10 \(\mu\)g = 0.152 nmol min\(^{-1}\)), MD-AC02 (5 \(\mu\)g = \(V_{\text{max}}\) 0.055 nmol min\(^{-1}\), and 10 \(\mu\)g = 0.129 nmol min\(^{-1}\)) and MD-AC03 (5 \(\mu\)g = \(V_{\text{max}}\) 0.090 nmol min\(^{-1}\), and 10 \(\mu\)g = 0.189 nmol min\(^{-1}\)).
Figure 3.26: Effect of MD-ACO Concentration on the $V_{\text{max}}$ of MD-ACO1 (A), MD-ACO2 (B) and MD-ACO3 (C)

10 $\mu$g of enzyme $\bullet$, and 5 $\mu$g of enzyme $\triangle$. 

Results
The optimal requirements of each isoform for co-substrate and cofactors were then determined at their optimal pHs and saturating ACC concentrations as described in section 2.3.8.1 and 2.3.8.2. The results from these studies are summarized as Table 3.11.

From the literature, a number of similar studies (Dong et al., 1992b; Poneleit and Dilley, 1993; Mizutani et al., 1995) have focussed on the role of CO₂ (as NaHCO₃). Therefore, the role of NaHCO₃ was examined more closely. With the omission of sodium bicarbonate from the ACO assay, the enzyme activity was determined over various ACC concentrations for each of the MD-ACO isoforms. In these assays enzyme activity decreased more than two-fold compared to the standard ACO assay containing NaHCO₃ (30 mM) in vitro (Figure 3.27).

### 3.2.3.2 The Michaelis-Constant \( (K_m) \) and Maximum Velocity \( (V_{max}) \) of the MD-ACO Isoforms for ACC

The dependence of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 activity on the concentration of ACC, assayed at the optimal pH (pH 7.5) and using the standard concentrations of sodium ascorbate (30 mM), ferrous iron (20 µM) and sodium bicarbonate (30 mM), exhibited Michaelis Menten kinetics (Figures 3.28). Enzyme activity of isoform MD-ACO1 approached saturation at an ACC concentration of 0.5 mM while, isoforms MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 were saturated at an ACC concentration of 1 mM (Figure 3.28). The apparent \( K_m \) and \( V_{max} \) were determined from Lineweaver-Burk plots (Figures 3.28). The apparent \( K_m \) of MD-ACO1 (89.39 µM) indicates that this isoform has a higher affinity for its substrate ACC than either MD-ACO2 (401.03 µM) by more than 4 fold, and MD-ACO3 (244.5 µM) by approximately 2.5 fold. MD-ACO2 has a lower \( V_{max} \) (12.94 nmol of ethylene mg⁻¹ min⁻¹) than the \( V_{max} \) of MD-ACO1 (15.15 nmol of ethylene mg⁻¹ min⁻¹) and MD-ACO3 (18.94 nmol of ethylene mg⁻¹ min⁻¹) which are similar. These values are also consistent with the \( V_{max} \) and \( K_m \) values obtained using the Eadie Hofstee regression (data not shown). \( K_{cat} \) values [ethylene evolution (mol s⁻¹) / MD-ACO (mol)] (refer Table 3.12), revealed MD-ACO3 (9.14 x 10⁻²) to have the higher turnover rate compared to MD-ACO1 (6.6 x 10⁻⁵) and the very sluggish MD-ACO2 (3.44 x 10⁻⁵). The \( K_{cat}/K_m \) (µM s⁻¹) is a useful means for comparing activities between enzymes, and values 7.38 x 10⁻⁴ µM s⁻¹ MD-ACO1, 0.86 x 10⁻⁴ µM s⁻¹ MD-ACO2 and 3.8 x 10⁻⁴ µM s⁻¹ MD-ACO3 were calculated. The results of this study indicate that the three MD-ACO isoforms have different kinetic properties, and will be analysed in the discussion.
Table 3.11: Summary of Substrate and Co-factor Requirements for MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 for Optimal Activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>MD-ACO1</th>
<th>MD-ACO2</th>
<th>MD-ACO3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>pH</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Activity range</td>
<td>6.5 – 8.0</td>
<td>6.5 -8.5</td>
<td>6.5 – 8.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optimal range</td>
<td>7.0 -7.5</td>
<td>7.5 - 8.0</td>
<td>7.0 - 8.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optima</td>
<td>7.2</td>
<td>7.8</td>
<td>7.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Ascorbate</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(absolute requirement)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optimal concentration</td>
<td>30 mM</td>
<td>30 mM</td>
<td>30 mM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50 % inhibition</td>
<td>40 mM</td>
<td>40 mM</td>
<td>40 mM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>FeSO₄.7H₂O</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optimal range</td>
<td>15 – 25 μM</td>
<td>15 – 25 μM</td>
<td>15 – 25 μM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maximum activity</td>
<td>20 μM</td>
<td>15 μM</td>
<td>20 μM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>≥ 70 % Inhibition</td>
<td>40 μM</td>
<td>40 μM</td>
<td>40 μM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Na’HCO₃⁻</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>¹ 30 to 40 % activity</td>
<td>0 mM</td>
<td>0 mM</td>
<td>0 mM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optimal range</td>
<td>20 – 40 mM</td>
<td>20 – 40 mM</td>
<td>10 – 40 mM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maximum activity</td>
<td>30 mM</td>
<td>30 mM</td>
<td>30 mM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>70 – 100 % inhibition</td>
<td>60 mM</td>
<td>60 mM</td>
<td>60 mM</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

¹ refer Figure 3.27
Figure 3.27: Activity Assays of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 Without the Presence of Sodium Bicarbonate (NaHCO₃) in the Reaction Mixture. 
A: MD-ACO1; B: MD-ACO2; C: MD-ACO3. Values and means ± SE (n=3) 

- NaHCO₃ (+) 
- NaHCO₃ (-)
Figure 3.28: Recombinant MD-ACO1 (A), MD-ACO2 (B) and MD-ACO3 (C) Activity as a Function of ACC Concentration. Each inset is the Lineweaver-Burk (double reciprocal) plot. Values and means ± SE (n = 6).
Table 3.12: Summary of Kinetic Properties of MD-ACO1 MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>MD-ACO1</th>
<th>MD-ACO2</th>
<th>MD-ACO3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$K_m$ ($\mu$M)</td>
<td>$89.39 \pm 9.7$</td>
<td>$401.03 \pm 22.1$</td>
<td>$244.5 \pm 14.2$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$V_{max}$ (nmol mg$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>$15.15 \pm 0.73$</td>
<td>$12.94 \pm 0.97$</td>
<td>$18.94 \pm 0.69$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$K_{cat}$ (s$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>$6.6 \times 10^{-2}$</td>
<td>$3.44 \times 10^{-2}$</td>
<td>$9.14 \times 10^{-2}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$K_{cat}/K_m$ ($\mu$M s$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>$7.38 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$0.86 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$3.8 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Values and means $\pm$ SE ($n = 6$).

3.2.3.3 Assessment of Some Kinetic Parameters Using the Same ACC Oxidase Isoform Generated in Two Different Expression Vector Systems

An anecdotal observation made during the kinetic study was that ACO activity was higher in the product of the pGEX vector than using the pProEx-1 expression vector. To examine this more closely an assessment of some of the kinetic parameters of the recombinant MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 expressed using the pGEX expression vector was undertaken and compared with the pProEX-1 expression. MD-ACO1, when expressed using the pGEX expression vector had a $K_m$ value of $82.74 \mu$M, a $V_{max}$ of $17.73$ nmol mg$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$ and approached saturation at an ACC concentration of $0.5$ mM which was very similar to MD-ACO1 expressed using the pProEX-1 expression vector. By contrast, the $V_{max}$ of MD-ACO2 ($18.38$ nmol mg$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$) expressed using the pGEX expression vector is much higher than MD-ACO2 ($12.94$ nmol mg$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$) expressed using the pProEx-1 vector. Further, MD-ACO2 expressed using the pGEX expression vector has a lower $K_m$ ($91.91$ $\mu$M) compared to MD-ACO2 expressed using the pProEx-1 expression vector, and approached saturation at ACC concentrations of $0.5$ mM (Figure 3.29). The results are summarized in Table 3.13.
Figure 3.29: Recombinant MD-ACO2 Activity as a Function of ACC Concentration, Expressed in the pGEX Vector. Inset is the Lineweaver-Burk (double reciprocal) plot. Values and means ± SE (n = 6).

Recombinant MD-ACO1 not shown: (refer Table 3.13)

Table 3.13: Some Kinetic Properties using the pGEX and pProEx-1 Expression Vectors

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>MD-ACO1</th>
<th></th>
<th>MD-ACO2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>pGEX</td>
<td>pProEx-1</td>
<td>pGEX</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$K_m$ (μM)</td>
<td>82.74 ± 8.1</td>
<td>89.39 ± 9.7</td>
<td>91.91 ± 13.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$V_{max}$ (nmol)</td>
<td>17.73 ± 0.53</td>
<td>15.15 ± 0.73</td>
<td>18.38 ± 0.64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACC (mM)</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Both the $V_{max}$ and $K_m$ values obtained for MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 expressed in the pGEX vector are consistent with the calculations using the Eadie-Hofstee regression plot (not shown).
3.2.3.3 Thermostability of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3

No significant difference in thermostability was found in this study between the MD-ACO isoforms. Two separate studies were carried out using the same temperatures, time of sampling and batch of enzyme samples. For each, study three aliquots of each isoform was used for each incubation temperature (25 °C, 35 °C and 45 °C), which required very rapid sampling and the need to store samples at 4 °C prior to the ACO assay to determine enzymatic activity using the gas chromatography (GC). As the incubation temperature increased the activities of all three isoforms decreased. Similarly, as the time of incubation lengthened the activities of all three isoforms also decreased (both temperature and time are therefore negatively correlated with apple ACO activity), (trend-lines representing the percentage of enzyme activity lost are shown as Figure 3.30). For example, following incubation at 25 °C the activity of all three isoforms reduced by approximately 50% in 30 min (Figure 3.30A), which represents a half-life (L½) of 30 min at 25 °C (Figure 3.30A). The half-life of all three isoforms at 35 °C is approximately 13 min and 30 seconds (Figure 3.30B), and the half-life of all three isoforms at an incubation temperature of 45 °C is approximately 5 minutes and 50 seconds (Figure 3.30C), in these studies. A summary of the percentage of enzyme activity lost after incubation at 25 °C, 35 °C and 45 °C for each of the sampling times is shown in Table 3.14.
Figure 3.30: Thermal Stability of *Malus domestica* ACC Oxidase at Incubation Temperatures of 25 °C, 35 °C and 45 °C.

The percentage of enzyme activity is shown for each incubation temperature, 25 °C (A), 35 °C (B), and 45 °C (C). Each trendline represents pooled data for MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 ACC oxidase activity (as a percentage) as a function of time in minutes. (n = 18)
Table 3.14: Summary of Thermal Stability of *Malus domestica* ACC Oxidases at Incubation Temperatures of 25 °C, 35 °C and 45 °C.

The data are presented as a percentage of the enzyme activity lost at each temperature and at each time (min.) of sampling. Data are pooled for MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Temperature</th>
<th>10 min</th>
<th>20 min</th>
<th>30 min</th>
<th>60 min</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>25 °C</td>
<td>15 ± 4 %</td>
<td>30 ± 5 %</td>
<td>50 ± 5 %</td>
<td>75 ± 2 %</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35 °C</td>
<td>40 ± 3 %</td>
<td>70 ± 6 %</td>
<td>80 ± 3 %</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45 °C</td>
<td>85 – 90 %</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Values and means ± SE (n = 18)
3.3 ACC Oxidase Gene Expression in the Bourse Shoot Leaves of Apple

For information about bourse shoot leaves refer section 1.6, and for the harvesting of leaf tissue samples refer section 2.1.

3.3.1 Physiological Measurements, MD-ACO Protein Accumulation and Gene Expression During Leaf Development

3.3.1.1 Change in Chlorophyll Concentration

Total chlorophyll (chlorophyll $a$ and $b$) concentration was determined in this study as an indicator of the developmental status (maturation and senescence) of leaves (Smart, 1994; Thomas, 1997; Hunter et al., 1999; Buchanan-Wollaston et al., 2003).

Early in the season as the bourse shoots were still growing it was unclear which buds would have an initial leaf on the day of sampling, which bourse shoots would have 5 bourse shoot leaves, and as the season progressed in order to collect samples from bourse shoots of the same approximate length and with the same approximate number of leaves, tagging was carried out on the day of sampling and samples were collected at 11 am. Bourse shoot leaf samples collected early in the season from initial leaf tissue following bud break (collected on 15.10.03) and from the second youngest leaf from the bourse shoot tissue (collected on 23.10.03) have lower chlorophyll levels than leaf tissue collected as the 2003/2004 growing season progressed (Figure 3.31). Leaf samples collected on 21.11.03 were from bourse shoots of approximately 10 cm in length, which had five leaves. All five bourse shoot leaves were collected, and each leaf categorized according to its position on the bourse shoot. For example, the initial leaf is labelled leaf one through to the fifth leaf which is labelled leaf five. Total chlorophyll levels increased from the initial leaf (343 µg g$^{-1}$ FW) to the basal leaf (1022.25 µg g$^{-1}$ FW), as the newly initiated leaf unfolded and expanded over the five developmental stages sampled (Figure 3.31). As the leaves matured chlorophyll $a$ concentration increased more rapidly than chlorophyll $b$ concentration, which is indicated by the ratio of chlorophyll $a:b$ changing from 1.85 in the initial leaf to 2.06 at the basal leaf (from tissue collected on 21.11.03). Tissue collected from initial, middle and basal leaf tissue at mid season (collected on 18.12.03 and 29.01.04) have similar chlorophyll content, with perhaps some decline in the basal leaf tissue for both days (Figure 3.31). The data coincides with the expected mature fully expanded green leaf status at mid season and the end of bourse shoot extension at mid to late January.
Figure 3.31: Changes in Chlorophyll Concentration as an Indicator of Leaf Maturation in *Malus domestica*.

Sample 1: Initial leaf (15.10.03), Sample 2: Second to youngest leaf (23.10.03), Samples 3 to 7: Leaves from newly initiated to basal are shown for (21.11.03), Samples 8 to 10: Leaves from newly initiated, middle and basal (18.12.03), Samples 11 to 13: Leaves from newly initiated, middle and basal (29.01.04). Symbols mean: Newly initiated (NI), middle (M) and basal (B). Values are means ± SE (n = 3).
To measure changes in chlorophyll concentration later in the season when the bourse shoot growth had terminated, pre-tagged fruiting and non fruiting bourse shoots (15 trees; ~7 tags per tree) at approximately 50 cm in length were pooled and used for this study. Leaves 5, 6 and 7 (counting from the apical end towards the basal end) were shown by statistical analysis (a one way analysis of variance) not to be significantly different at the \( p = 0.05 \) level (data not shown). Therefore, leaves 5 to 7 from each bourse shoot were collected during this study, including for the photosynthetic measurements, for the protein accumulation and for the gene expression studies, with the leaf samples collected at approximately 11 am. Chlorophyll concentration in leaf tissue collected from mid-season through to senescence (4.03.03 to 26.05.03) decreased as the leaves aged (Figure 3.32). Chlorophyll \( a \) concentration declines in very close synchrony with the decrease of total chlorophyll levels. In this study chlorophyll \( a \) degraded more quickly than chlorophyll \( b \) from 04.03.03 to 04.04.03 reflected in the chlorophyll \( a \) to \( b \) ratios of 2.30 to 2.13 (Figure 3.32), but then increased from 14.04.03 to 02.05.03 before the ratio again decreased from 2.05.03 to 26.05.03.

In sampling in 2004, chlorophyll content determined through to senescence (29.01.04 to 26.04.04) (Figure 3.33A) followed the 2003 decline in chlorophyll levels as the leaves aged, notably from 29.03.04 to 22.04.04, as reflected in the chlorophyll \( a:b \) ratio of 3.56 to 1.71. In 2005, chlorophyll concentrations prior to fruit harvest (15.02.05 and 01.03.05) and post fruit harvest (16.03.05, 30.03.05 and 07.04.05) also trended downwards gradually, but sampling ceased prior to the completion of senescence so that the chlorophyll content is unable to be compared directly with the other seasons (Figure 3.33B). The leaves of apple entered senescence at different times over the three seasons examined in this study, and also at different times within the same season (as judged by leaf colour change, and necrosis), probably as a consequence of their individual micro-environments. This may have resulted in a greater variability of chlorophyll levels amongst the ageing leaves, both within seasons and between seasons.

### 3.3.1.2 Photosynthesis Measurements

Assessment of the leaf carbon assimilation status of apple leaves from mid season through senescence in 2003 was undertaken using a portable photosynthetic system (PP Systems, Haverhill, MA, USA), in the field at approximately 11 am each day of sampling. Physiological measurements of net photosynthesis (\( \text{pn}; \mu \text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1} \)), stomatal conductance (\( \text{mmol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1} \)) and evaporation representing transpiration (\( \text{mmol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1} \)) were used for comparisons. Leaf carbon assimilation decreased from mid-season through to senescence, in concert with a decrease in chlorophyll concentrations in the leaf tissue (Figure 3.34). As expected, evaporation mimics
Figure 3.32: Changes in Chlorophyll Concentration as an Indicator of Leaf Senescence in *Malus domestica*.

The date indicates the day the sample was collected, and also the chlorophyll $a$ to chlorophyll $b$ ratios are indicated. Values are means ± SE ($n = 3$).
Figure 3.33: Chlorophyll Concentration as an Indicator of Leaf Senescence in *Malus domestica*.

A: Chlorophyll concentrations for 2004; B: Chlorophyll concentrations for 2005.

The date indicates the day the sample was collected, and the chlorophyll *a* to chlorophyll *b* ratios are indicated. Values are means ± SE (n = 3).
Figure 3.34: Leaf Carbon Assimilation in *Malus domestica* as an Indicator of Leaf Senescence.

Leaf carbon assimilation or net photosynthesis (pn) measured in \( \mu \text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1} \) using the portable photosynthetic system on the same days and at the same time as samples were collected for chlorophyll extraction and analysis.
Results 16 3

stomatal conductance with the levels of both dropping immediately following fruit harvest (24.03.03), and then becoming elevating a few weeks prior to leaf necrosis (data not shown).

An attempt was made to assess ethylene evolution levels from leaves harvested at the same time as those collected for chlorophyll extraction. Four hours after detachment the leaves were sealed in containers and incubated at 30 °C for 20 min after which a 1 mL gas sample was analysed for ethylene concentration using the GC. However, ethylene evolution was inconsistent and uninterpretable (data not shown) and so these determinations were not continued.

3.3.1.3 Protein Accumulation and Gene Expression

ACO protein accumulation in apple leaf tissue (collected at the beginning of the season to mid-season) was examined using western blot analysis with either the MD-ACO1 antibody (Figure 3.35) or MD-ACO3 antibody (Figure 3.36). Recognition of proteins of the expected molecular mass (35.35 kDa) were not apparent using the MD-ACO1 antibody for the apple leaf samples (Lanes 3 to 7 and 10 to 14; Figure 3.35), although recognition of an immunoreactive ACO from fruit is observed clearly (Lanes 2 and 9; Figure 3.35). Therefore, accumulation of MD-ACO1 in leaf tissue was not studied further in this thesis. In contrast, recognition was observed in the same apple leaf extracts using the antibody raised against MD-ACO3 (Lanes 1 & 2, 4 to 8 and 10 to 12; Figure 3.36), except in extracts from 29.01.04 leaf tissue (Lanes 14 to 16; Figure 3.36) where bands are not clearly distinguishable.

During leaf maturation and senescence, protein accumulation and gene expression of ACO was also examined. To look at protein accumulation, leaf samples collected from 4.03.03 to 26.05.03 were examined using western blot analysis with antibodies raised against MD-ACO3 (Figure 3.37). In these experiments, bands of a higher mass, than for the immunoreactive ACO from fruit tissue, appeared in the leaf tissue samples collected prior to fruit harvest (indicated with an asterisk on Figure 3.37; Lanes 3 and 4), whereas no antibody recognition is apparent in the leaf samples collected after fruit harvest (Figure 3.37; Lanes 5 to 11). This data suggests that antibody raised against MD-ACO3 is recognising a protein distinct from the fruit-associated MD-ACO1 protein, and that transcription and/or translation of this protein may be terminated when the fruit is removed from the apple tree en masse.

To examine ACO gene expression from mid season through to senescence, total RNA was extracted from leaf tissue collected from 04.03.03 to 26.05.03. Northern blot analysis was largely unsuccessful due to the degradation of RNA, particularly during the senescent stages.
Figure 3.35: ACC Oxidase Accumulation in the Leaves of *Malus domestica*, from Early to Mid-Season, using Antibodies Raised Against Recombinant MD-ACO1

For apple leaf tissue, 20 μg of protein per well was loaded, while 10 μg of protein per well was loaded of apple fruit tissue. Antibody recognition was determined using a goat anti-rabbit alkaline phosphatase conjugated secondary antibody. Lanes 1 and 8: SDS-PAGE (low range) standards, Lane 2 and 9: apple fruit tissue, Lane 3: apple leaf tissue (15.10.03), Lane 4: apple leaf tissue (23.10.03), Lane 5: initial leaf tissue (29.01.04), Lane 6: middle (5, 6 or 7) leaf (29.01.04), Lane 7: basal leaf tissue (29.01.04), Lane 10: initial leaf tissue (21.11.03), Lane 11: second leaf (21.11.03), Lane 12: third leaf (21.11.03), Lane 13: fourth leaf (21.11.03), Lane 14: basal leaf tissue (21.11.03).
Figure 3.36: ACC Oxidase Accumulation in the Leaves of *Malus domestica*, from Early to Mid-season, using Antibodies Raised Against MD-ACO3

For apple leaf tissue, 20 μg of protein per well was loaded, while 10 μg of protein per well was loaded of apple fruit tissue. Antibody recognition was determined using a goat anti-rabbit alkaline phosphatase conjugated secondary antibody. Lane 1: apple leaf tissue (15.10.03), Lane 2: apple leaf tissue (23.10.03), Lane 3: SDS-PAGE (low range) standards, Lane 4: initial leaf tissue (21.11.03), Lane 5: second leaf (21.11.03), Lane 6: third leaf (21.11.03), Lane 7: fourth leaf (21.11.03), Lane 8: basal leaf tissue (21.11.03), Lane 9: apple fruit tissue (not very clear), Lane 10: initial leaf tissue (18.12.03), Lane 11: middle (5, 6 or 7) leaf (18.12.03), Lane 12: basal leaf tissue (18.12.03), Lane 13: SDS-PAGE (low range) standards, Lane 14: initial leaf tissue (29.12.03), Lane 15: middle (5, 6 or 7) leaf (29.12.03), Lane 16: basal leaf tissue (29.12.03).
Figure 3.37: Changes in ACC Oxidase Protein Accumulation in Leaf Tissue from Mid-Season Through to Senescence (2003) in *Malus domestica*.

Examination of protein accumulation using western blot analysis (40 µg protein per lane), of leaf tissue collected at approximately 11 am on the day of sampling (dates are indicated including the date of fruit harvest). Apple fruit tissue extracts are also included. Western analysis using antibodies raised against MD-ACO3.
Relative quantitative RT-PCR (section 2.2.3.4) was undertaken to determine whether cDNA Southern blot analysis would be a viable alternative to northern analysis, and some early season initial leaf samples (collected on 15.10.03, 23.10.03 and 21.11.03) were included. Using this approach bands of the expected size appeared after the first PCR amplification round (29 cycles) when primers for either $MD$-$ACO2$ (fragments 790 bp) or $MD$-$ACO3$ (fragments 800 bp) were used. When $MD$-$ACO1$ primers were used, no PCR products were detected (Figure 3.38), even after a second round of PCR amplification. However, fragments were clearly visible when the same $MD$-$ACO1$ primers were used to amplify fragments from apple fruit tissue following an RT reaction (data not shown). Ribosomal RNA (18S) was used as a control and appeared on all of the gels at the expected fragment size of 315 bp (Figure 3.38).

Following cDNA Southern blot analysis on the same tissue extracts (collected from 04.03.03 to 26.05.03 and used for relative quantitative RT-PCR; data not shown), both $MD$-$ACO2$ and $MD$-$ACO3$ probes hybridized with cDNA fragments at the expected size of 790 bp and 800 bp respectively, prior to apple fruit harvest (Figure 3.38). However, such hybridization is not evident after the removal of the fruit from the trees. One round of PCR amplification (30 cycles) of the cDNA transcripts (from the cDNA mix used to amplify fragments for cDNA Southern analysis) using universal primers for $\beta$-actin (Table 2.2) generated fragments of ca. 250 bp. Taken together the data indicates either that $MD$-$ACO1$ is uninduced in leaf tissue or that the quantities of $MD$-$ACO1$ transcript are lower in leaf tissue than the sensitivity of the systems used and hence unable to be detected. In contrast both $MD$-$ACO2$ and $MD$-$ACO3$ are expressed in initial leaf tissue and mature green fully expanded leaf tissue, but the expression of both isoforms is undetectable in leaf tissue collected after the fruit has been harvested en masse.

A further study from mid-season through senescence was undertaken during 2004 (collected from 29.01.04 to 26.04.04; Figure 3.39A) and, then in 2005, two samples were collected prior to fruit harvest on the 02.03.05 (15.02.05 and 01.03.05; Figure 3.39B) and two samples were collected post fruit harvest (16.03.05 and 30.03.05; Figure 3.39B). Both the 2004 and the 2005 data corroborates the 2003 data in so far as ACO gene expression is not detectable after fruit harvest. As cDNA fragments were generated using actin primers (Table 2.2) ACO was probably not present in the total RNA extracted from leaf tissue. However, evidence of ACO gene expression prior to fruit harvest is very unconvincing for the 2005 data, although the recognition of protein at a lower mass (ca. 33.8 and 27 kDa) by the MD-ACO antibody is evident (Figure 3.39B). This may be degraded/fragmented MD-ACO3, or another isoform, since recognition of any protein is very faint.
Figure 3.38: RT-PCR Analysis and cDNA Southern Blot Analysis of ACC Oxidase Gene Expression (2003).

(A) Primers used to amplify MD-ACO1 fragments, (B) Primers used to amplify MD-ACO2 fragments and (C) Primers used to amplify MD-ACO3 fragments. cDNA Southerns were washed at high stringency.
Figure 3.39: Gene Expression and Protein Accumulation of ACC Oxidase from Mid-Season Through to Senescence

Western blots analysis (40 μg protein per well) using antibody raised against recombinant MD-ACO3 for 2004 (A) and for 2005 (B). cDNA Southern blot analysis, using gene-specific primers and probes for both MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 for 2004 (A) and 2005 (B), (No bands were evident after a second round PCR either).
3.3.2 ACC Oxidase Gene Expression and Protein Accumulation in the Leaves of Apple over a 24 h Period

RT-PCR and cDNA Southern blot analysis were used in an attempt to establish whether ACO gene transcripts are expressed in a circadian rhythm. Patterns of ACO protein accumulation were also examined using western blot analysis with antibodies raised against MD-ACO3. Leaves were collected, from pre-tagged bourse shoots, every 3 h over a 24 h period, early in the season (collected from 20.11.03 to 21.11.03) and then late in the season (collected from 07.04.04 to 08.04.04, and 06.04.05 to 07.04.05).

In November (20.11.03 to 21.11.03), when the diameter of the abundant fruit measured approximately 2 cm, bourse shoots were chosen and tagged if they had 5 leaves and were then used to examine gene expression and protein accumulation patterns of ACO over a 24 h period. MD-ACO2 probes hybridized to fragments at approximately six hourly intervals (noon, 6 pm, midnight, 6 am and noon) with a less intense band occurring at midnight (Figure 3.40A). MD-ACO3 displayed a similar hybridization pattern to that of MD-ACO2 at 6 hourly intervals (noon, 3 pm, 6 pm, midnight, 6 am and noon), although the midnight band is no less intense than the bands occurring during the daylight hours, and a further band occurs at 3 pm (Figure 3.40B). For MD-ACO3, the second round PCR reflects the cDNA Southern blot analysis, except that no band was visible at 3 pm (Figure 3.40C). Actin controls indicate that the RT reaction was successful in that cDNA actin was generated, in the absence of both hybridization and the generation of PCR products for the MD-ACOs. In contrast, the MD-ACO3 antibodies recognised protein at each of the sampling times, with no detectable difference in mass or intensity (Figure 3.40D). Further, the protein is of a higher mass than the ACO recognised from the fruit tissue (ca. 35.35 kDa).

In April (7.04.04 to 8.04.04), from pre-tagged bourse shoots (~50 cm), leaves (5, 6 or 7) were collected to investigate gene expression and protein accumulation patterns of ACO in the leaves of apple over a 24 h period. As the fruit had been harvested previously (27.02.04) both fruiting and non-fruiting bourse shoot leaves were used. MD-ACO2 fragments hybridized at noon and 3 pm and then again at 9 pm during the hours of darkness (sunset 6 pm), after which some hybridization occurred at 6 am, before sunrise at 6.45 am, followed by stronger hybridization at 9 pm and at noon (Figure 3.41A). Second round PCR also reflects the cDNA Southern gene expression (data not shown). In contrast, MD-ACO3 fragments hybridize at each of the sampling times over the entire 24 h period and, except for lower levels of transcript at sunset (6 pm) and at 3 am, gene expression appears to be constitutive (Figure 3.41B). Second round PCR also reflects the cDNA Southern gene expression (data not shown). Antibodies
Figure 3.40: Circadian Rhythm of ACC Oxidase Gene Expression Over 24 h in the Leaves of Malus domestica (November, 2003).

The apple fruit were approximately 2 cm in diameter. Southern cDNA blot analysis using MD-ACO2 (A) and MD-ACO3 (B) fragments, Second round PCR using MD-ACO3 specific primers (C). Western blot analysis using antibodies raised against MD-ACO3 (D).
Figure 3.41: Circadian Rhythm of ACC Oxidase Gene Expression Over 24 h in the Leaves of *Malus domestica* (April, 2004).

Apple fruit had been harvested (27.02.04). Southern cDNA blot analysis using *MD-ACO2* (A) and *MD-ACO3* (B) fragments. Western blot analysis using antibodies raised against MD-ACO3 (C).
raised against MD-ACO3 recognise protein accumulation at 3 pm and 3 am in particular (Figure 3.41C), although lighter bands also appear over the whole period. The MD-ACO3 antibodies also recognise protein of a lower molecular mass (ca. 33.8 kDa) most notably at 6 am, which may be degraded MD-ACO3 or another MD-ACO isoform.

In April (06.04.05 to 07.04.05) pre-tagged bourse shoots on trees with fruit and on trees with the fruit removed (strip-picked 02.03.05) were used to examine whether gene transcript expression and protein accumulation patterns of ACO varied over 24 h as a direct consequence of the fruit status of the tree. Leaf tissue collected from the trees without fruit appeared not to express any ACO transcripts, as neither MD-ACO2 nor MD-ACO3 fragments hybridized (Figures 3.42A and 3.42B), which is also reflected in the second round PCR (Figure 3.42C), and MD-ACO3 antibody did not recognise any protein over the period (Figure 3.42D). In contrast, the trees with fruit appeared to express both MD-ACO2 (Figure 3.43A) and MD-ACO3 (Figure 3.43B) during the light period, and MD-ACO3 fragments also hybridized at 3 am during the dark period (Figures 3.43B), which is also reflected in second round PCR (Figure 3.43C). Antibody raised against the MD-ACO3 antibody recognises some protein accumulation, of more than 35.35 kDa, over the entire 24 h period prior to fruit removal, perhaps slightly more at 3 am and 6 am of the dark period (Figure 3.43D). Taken as a whole it appears that MD-ACO2 or MD-ACO3 are not expressed in bourse shoot leaves once the fruit has been removed. Although the results of the 2004 season (Figure 3.41) indicate there are seasonal changes, and clearly something other than fruit removal must influence ACO expression and accumulation.
Figure 3.42: Circadian rhythm of ACC Oxidase Gene Expression Over 24 h in the Leaves of *Malus domestica* (Fruit Removed From the Trees; April, 2005).

The apple fruit were harvested 02.03.05. Southern cDNA blot analysis using *MD-ACO2* fragments (A), and *MD-ACO3* fragments (B). Second round PCR using gene specific primers to amplify fragments (C). Western blot analysis using antibodies raised against MD-ACO3 (D).
Results

Figure 3.43: Circadian Rhythm of ACC Oxidase Gene Expression Over 24 h in the Leaves of *Malus domestica* (with Fruit; April, 2005).

The apple fruit remained on the trees. Southern cDNA blot analysis using *MD-ACO2* fragments (A), and *MD-ACO3* fragments (B). Second round PCR using gene specific primers to amplify fragments (C). Western blot analysis using antibodies raised against MD-ACO3 (D).
Chapter Four

4.1 Overview

ACO gene expression, enzyme accumulation and kinetic properties have been well documented during apple fruit development (Atkinson et al., 1998; Cin et al., 2005; Ross et al., 1992; Dong et al., 1992b; Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Kuai and Dilley, 1992; Dilley et al., 1993; Poneleit and Dilley, 1993; Fernández-Maculet et al., 1993; Dupille et al., 1993; Pirrung et al., 1993), but not during apple leaf development. Therefore, this study seeks to investigate ACO in the bourse shoot leaves of apple, the leaves closely associated with fruit development, to enhance our understanding of the regulation of ACO during apple leaf maturation and senescence. The thesis is divided into three sections. The first section aims to establish the small multi-gene family of apple ACO and to confirm that each of the transcripts is encoded for by a distinct gene. The second section aims to establish that each of the three isoforms are different by analyses of the kinetic properties of each of the enzymes. The third section aims to establish the expression patterns of each of the genes during leaf ontogeny.

4.2 ACC Oxidase Genes in *Malus domestica*

4.2.1 Evidence of a Multi-Gene Family in Apple by Genomic Southern Analysis

Southern analysis of genomic apple DNA using sequences which spanned the ORF and the 3′-UTR as probes, confirmed that the *MD-ACO3* sequence is encoded by a gene distinct from both *MD-ACO1* and *MD-ACO2*, as the hybridization patterns following restriction digests with EcoRI, HindIII and Xbal, are clearly different (Figure 3.10B).

Interestingly, every one of the restriction digested fragments which have hybridised with *MD-ACO2* are of the same approximate size as fragments which have hybridized with *MD-ACO1*. A striking observation is that only one genomic fragment tends to hybridize with *MD-ACO2* whereas two fragments tend to hybridize with *MD-ACO1*. This is most evident with the HindIII digested fragments where fragments of 1.5 kb and 1.9 kb strongly hybridize with *MD-ACO1* compared with the one fragment of 1.9 kb which hybridized with *MD-ACO2* (Figure 3.10B). As in this study restriction sites for EcoRI, HindIII and Xbal are not present in the probe used for the genomic Southern hybridization, and therefore there are no internal restriction sites, when two fragments from the same digest hybridize with a specific probe this indicates that there maybe two copies of the gene in the genome, and similarly, when one fragment from the same digest hybridises with a specific probes this is indicative of a single gene present in the genome. In previous studies, the *pAP4* clone (cv. Golden Delicious; number X61390; Ross et
al., 1992; designated MD-ACO1 in this thesis) was used as a RFLP marker (restriction fragment length polymorphisms) to construct linkage maps of the progeny of a cross between the apple cultivars Prima and Fiesta (in common with Royal Gala, these cultivars have 34 somatic chromosomes and a haploid number of 17), and was found at two loci, one on chromosome 5 (pAP4a) and one on chromosome 10 (pAP4b) (Maliepaard et al., 1998). This indicates that MD-ACO1 may be present at two different loci in the genome of the cv. Royal Gala. Also, Southern analysis using DNA extracted from cv. Golden Delicious, and digested with EcoRI, HindIII and BamHI and then probed with 32P-labelled pAP4 (designated MD-ACO1 in this thesis) (Ross et al., 1992), revealed that two fragments hybridized with pAP4 for each of the genomic digests. For example, for HindIII digested fragments, two fragments hybridized strongly with pAP4 of ca. 1.5 kb and 1.9 kb, and these fragments are the same approximate size as the fragments which hybridised with MD-ACO1 in the present study. Similarly, for the Golden Delicious genomic DNA digested with EcoRI a fragment hybridised strongly with pAP4 of ca. 2.5 kb and less intensely with a fragment of ca. 5.0 kb. Again, the fragment sizes which hybridized with MD-ACO1 in the present study are of the same approximate size and relative intensity, although there are also bands of a larger size present (of ca. 8, 10.5 and 12 kb). These larger fragments may represent partial digests as only a visual assessment of genome digestion is made. For the BamHI digested fragments, pAP4 also hybridized with two fragments of ca. 2 kb and 1 kb although the restriction enzyme BamHI was not used in the present study. Hence, the evidence gathered to date strongly suggests that two copies of MD-ACO1 are present in the cv. Royal gala genome. By contrast one copy of MD-ACO2 appears to be present in the cv. Royal Gala genome. For example, for the HindIII digest, one fragment of ca. 1.9 hybridized with MD-ACO2, and for the XbaI digest, one fragment of ca. 15 kb hybridized with MD-CO2, (although there is another less intense larger fragment). For the EcoRI digest, the fragment which strongly hybridized with MD-ACO2 of ca. 5 kb corresponds with the approximate fragment size which hybridized with pAP4 (Ross et al., 1992) and MD-ACO1 in this study, and there is also a less intense band of ca. 8 kb.

The observation that the restriction digested fragments which have hybridized with MD-ACO2 are the same approximate size as fragments which have hybridized with MD-ACO1 suggests that MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 may be tightly clustered on the genome as the restriction digests are so similar (Dr Sue Gardiner, HortResearch, New Zealand, pers. comm.). However, the Southern blot analysis does not give enough information as to whether MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are indeed clustered and encoded by distinct genes, or whether in fact they are alleles of the same gene. Gene mapping of the genomic or mRNA sequence of MD-ACO2 would give the exact location(s) of the sequence on a specific chromosome(s) and may also determine whether
MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are clustered or allelic, but even so very fine grained mapping would be necessary.

MD-ACO3 is clearly a gene distinct from both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2. However, while one fragment has strongly hybridised with MD-ACO3 following an XbaI digest (of 5.1 kb), two fragments have strongly hybridised with MD-ACO3 following a HindIII digest (3.3 kb and 5 kb), with a less intense band of ca. 6 kb. Therefore, MD-ACO3 is probably present in the cv. Royal Gala genome as a single copy, but the two fragments which hybridize with the probe following the HindIII digest raise the possibility that two copies of MD-ACO3 may be present. If XbaI were to be an infrequent cutter for example, and both copies were present on the same fragment, then perhaps the second copy could be missed using Southern analysis. Hybridisation with MD-ACO3 following the EcoRI digest is unclear, but fragments have hybridized with MD-ACO3 of ca. 2.9 kb and also with fragments of a larger size. Hence, it is unclear whether a single copy or two copies of MD-ACO3 are present in the Royal Gala genome.

Ross et al., (1992) conclude that their Southern analysis confirms the presence of at least one HindIII restriction site in the gene, as predicted from the pAP4 cDNA. A HindIII restriction site occurs in the third exon of both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 (refer Figure 3.6). However, in this study neither the MD-ACO1 nor the MD-ACO2 sequences used as probes contain HindIII, EcoRI or XbaI restriction sites. As there are other less intense bands with all three restriction enzymes, even at high stringency, for all of the MD-ACO probes, they may represent the presence of sequences related but not totally identical to MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3, which may indicate a possible fourth MD-ACO gene.

4.2.2 Gene Structure of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3;
Comparison of Exons and Introns

MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 genes share the same gene structure, in that each gene contains four exons interspersed with three intron sequences (Figure 3.6). As the genomic sequence of MD-ACO3 is unavailable, the distribution of introns remains unknown.

All three MD-ACOs share the same nucleotide length for exon 1, exon 2 and exon 3, and while both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 have a HindIII site at the same location on the third exon, they do not share the same location for the other restriction sites. For example, MD-ACO1 has two HindIII sites and an EcoRI site in the second intron, which are not present in MD-ACO2, and MD-ACO2 has a HindIII site in the first intron which is not present in MD-ACO1. This difference, again raises the question of whether MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are encoded by
distinct genes or whether they are allelic forms of the same gene, as the restriction sites are so different. Exon 4 varies between MD-ACO1 (276 bp) and MD-ACO2 (324 bp) by 48 bp representing 16 extra amino acids (aa) at the carboxyl end of MD-ACO2. A comparison of average peptide number over the first 23 ACOs sequenced revealed a value of 314 residues (Kadyrzhanova et al., 1997). Inspection of the of 85 ACO sequences available on the NCBI protein database, and gathered for the construction of the phylogenetic tree (Figure 3.8), reveal the majority of proteins are between 314 aa and 322 aa. However it is unclear whether all these are active enzymes. MD-ACO2 (330 aa) has the highest number of residues and is the only ACO with a peptide number more than 322 aa. Nevertheless, MD-ACO1 (314 aa), MD-ACO2 (330 aa) and MD-ACO3 (322 aa) structure is comparable with ACO from other species.

The conservation in gene structure is not only displayed in apple, but can also be observed in other species. In comparison with other published accounts of ACO gene structures, the occurrence of 4 exons interspersed with 3 introns has been observed in white clover (TR-ACO1, TR-ACO2, TR-ACO3 and TR-ACO4) (Chen and McManus, 2006), melon (CM-ACO1) (Lasserre et al., 1996), peach (PP-ACO1) (Ruperti et al., 2001) and in petunia (PH-ACO1, PH-ACO3 and PH-ACO4) (Tang et al., 1993). It should be noted that other members of the melon family (CM-ACO2, CM-ACO3) and peach (PP-ACO2) comprise 2 introns interspersing 3 exons (Lasserre et al., 1996; Ruperti et al., 2001).

Identities calculated between the introns of MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are lower than the identities between each of the the exons of MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 (Table 3.6). Sequence comparisons between the entire open reading frames (ORFs) of the MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 (93.9 %) transcripts (Table 3.7, A and B) reveals a higher identity than between the 3'UTR sequences (69.5 %) which supports the hypothesis of these being two distinct MD-ACO genes. This is also consistent with white clover ACO studies (Hunter et al., 1999) where greater identity was found over the reading frame (> 90 %) than the 3'-UTR (~70 %), and also with peach, where identity between the coding regions of PP-ACO1 and PP-ACO2 (77.7 %) is higher than for the 5' and 3'-UTRs of 44 % and 50.4 % respectively (Ruperti et al., 2001). The identities between the ORF transcripts of MD-ACO3 and both MD-ACO1 (78.5 %) and MD-ACO2 (77.8 %) are almost as low as the identities between the MD-ACO3 transcripts for the 3'UTR of MD-ACO1 (68.4 %) and MD-ACO2 (69.5 %), indicating a greater divergence of MD-ACO3 from both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2.

Interestingly, the genome of Gala apple has been observed by Castiglione et al. (1999), to contain heterozygous alleles of different molecular weights and restriction patterns, following PCR-RFLP analysis of ACO using specific primers to the pAP4 clone (designated MD-ACO1 in
this thesis) and digested with HindIII. Such DNA polymorphism may suggest that MD-AC01 and MD-AC02 are two forms of the same gene (MD-AC01-1 and MD-AC01-2), since polymorphism refers to the simultaneous occurrence in the population of genomes showing allelic variation (as seen either in alleles producing different phenotypes or, for example, in changes in DNA affecting the restriction pattern). For example, Sunako et al., (1999) reported that the cv. Golden Delicious is either heterozygous for ACS (ACS1-1 and ACS1-2) or homozygous for each type. Further, it was demonstrated that the level of transcript from ACS1-2 during the ripening stage was very low and consequently has a longer storage life than ACS1-1. Such differences in alleles may lead to the possibility of one of the allelic forms being selected for breeding rather than another. Evidence from both the genomic Southern blot analysis and the comparison of the gene structure of MD-AC01, MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 confirms that MD-AC03 is encoded by a gene distinct from MD-AC01 and MD-AC02. However, it remains unclear whether MD-AC01 and MD-AC02 are two distinct genes or allelic forms of the same gene.

4.2.3 Translated Products of MD-ACO Genes

Amino acid sequence identity between MD-AC01 and MD-AC02 (92.04 %) is higher than either MD-AC03 and MD-AC01 (80.57 %) or MD-AC03 and MD-AC02 (75.16 %) and broadly reflects the nucleic acid sequence identities (Table 3.7C). It is of note that all three gene products of apple ACO have the conserved amino acids, found necessary to date (Zhang et al., 2004; Dilley et al., 2003; Kadyrzhanova et al., 1999; 1997), for the appropriate structure and function of the protein (Figure 3.7).

Examination of the phylogenetic tree (Figure 3.8) indicates that MD-AC01 and MD-AC02 proteins would have diverged sometime ago (Dr Peter Lockhart, IMBS, Massey University, pers. comm.), as the length of the branches are indicative of the evolutionary time of divergence. Of note, PC-ACO1 of Pyrus communis (European pear) cloned from the cortical tissue of unripe mature fruit is located close to MD-AC01, PP-AOX4 of Pyrus pyrifolium (Asian pear) cloned from the immature fruit is located close to MD-AC02, whilst JP-AOX3 from ripe pear fruit (Japanese: Asian pear) is situated closest to MD-AC03. This is in contrast to the virtual northern (Figure 3.11) where MD-AC01 and MD-AC02 are more closely associated with the fruit and MD-AC03 is associated with leaf tissue. Bootstrap analysis supports the evidence that MD-AC01 and MD-AC02 are encoded by two distinct genes. Overall, it seems MD-AC01 and MD-AC02 are distinct genes which diverged some time ago, but are closely related compared to MD-AC03. It should be noted that the stop codon for MD-AC01 is TGA and when the MD-AC02 sequence is aligned with the MD-AC01 sequence, the codon at the same position for
MD-ACO2 is CGA. Hence, a single base-pair mutation in either MD-ACO1 or MD-ACO2 perhaps underlies the divergence of the two genes. Phylogenetic analysis does not indicate in which order the three isoforms evolved. Taken together, the phylogenetic tree (Figure 3.8) constructed from an alignment of 85 ACO NCBI protein database sequences with the deduced amino acid sequences for MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 over the entire open reading frame, suggests that the gene products are derived from three different MD-ACO genes.

4.2.4 Confirmation of MD-ACO Differential Gene Expression In Vivo

In order to determine the gene expression patterns and relative abundance of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 transcripts in apple, relative quantitative RT-PCR with ribosomal RNA controls was used (Figure 3.14). The debate about using a relative quantitative RT-PCR technique to successfully demonstrate levels of specific transcripts verses conventional northern blotting is ongoing (Hengen, 1995). Some supporters do find the RT-PCR method both more valid and reliable than northern analysis (Jaakola et al., 2001). RNA extracted from young leaf, mature green leaf, young fruit (~2 cm diameter) and mature fruit tissue, after RT using random primers and PCR using gene specific primers, produced different expression patterns for each of the three genes as revealed by ethidium bromide staining.

Expression studies with MD-ACO1 showed that the gene is expressed in mature fruit, with negligible amounts in young fruit, and no transcripts were visible at all in leaf tissue. This suggests that MD-ACO1 is expressed in a tissue-specific manner, and is present only in fruit tissue and specifically in mature fruit tissue. This is consistent with the lack of pAE12 mRNA transcript reported by Dong et al., (1992b) in preclimacteric apple fruit untreated with ethylene, and also in agreement with the later western blot analysis in this study (Figure 3.24A) where an antibody raised against MD-ACO1 recognised a protein that accumulated in mature fruit. Both the virtual northern (Figure 3.11) and the cDNA Southern analysis (Figure 3.15) also support the RT-PCR findings that MD-ACO1 is expressed (of the tissues examined) exclusively in apple fruit tissue in vivo. Further, fragments of the MD-ACO1 (clone pAP4) promoter (-1966 bp upstream of ATG) fused to the β-glucuronidase (GUS) reporter gene and transformed as translational fusions expressed in tomato by Atkinson et al., (1998) were found to be active only in the fruit in a ripening specific pattern.

In contrast, using relative quantitative RT-PCR, primers specific for MD-ACO2 transcripts amplified products from apple tissue in a developmentally-regulated manner. A comparatively higher level of MD-ACO2 was found in fruit tissue compared to a much smaller amount of transcript found in leaf tissue (Figure 3.14). However, in the virtual northern the EST sequence
most similar to \textit{MD-ACO2} (EST 153710) was found in apple fruit and spur buds only (Figure 3.11). cDNA Southern analysis using semi-degenerate primers (Figure 3.15) supports the findings that \textit{MD-ACO2} transcripts are expressed predominantly in apple fruit tissue and at lower levels in leaf tissue, although a non quantitative analysis using oligo d(T)$_{15}$ primers and 30 PCR amplification cycles (Figure 3.12) reveals bands of similar intensity in young leaf, mature leaf, young fruit and mature fruit. Although the relative quantitative RT-PCR must be seen as the more credible data, the question of the temporal expression of \textit{MD-ACO2} in leaf tissue is raised. The EST sequence (EST 153710) that corresponds to \textit{MD-ACO2} was extracted mainly from fruit but also from the spur buds (Figure 3.11), while the \textit{MD-ACO2} identified in this study was cloned from the leaves of apple (initial, mature fully expanded and senescent) using degenerate universal primers (Figure 2.2), cloned into pGEM and sequenced. It must be concluded therefore that \textit{MD-ACO2} is expressed in apple leaf tissue.

For \textit{MD-ACO3}, gene-specific primers amplified products in all of the apple tissues examined in a developmentally regulated manner with less intense staining in mature fruit tissue and the most intense staining in young leaf tissue. In the virtual northern, the EST sequence most similar to \textit{MD-ACO3} (EST 179706 and EST 192136) were identified in fruit, seedling leaves and senescing leaf tissue (Figure 3.11). In the cDNA Southern analysis (Figure 3.15), \textit{MD-ACO3} transcripts occur predominantly in initial leaf tissue, less intensely in mature green tissue and even less intensely in young fruit tissue. Because the band is barely visible in mature fruit tissue in the cDNA Southern, it could be interpreted as an artefact of the high levels of \textit{MD-ACO1} and \textit{MD-ACO2} in mature apple fruit. However, using relative quantitative RT-PCR (Figure 3.14) \textit{MD-ACO3} is clearly shown to be expressed in mature fruit tissue. Taken together, \textit{MD-ACO3} in these studies is expressed most strongly in apple leaf and in particular young leaf tissue \textit{in vivo}, but also young fruit, with a much lower level of expression in mature fruit tissue.

In summary, therefore, \textit{MD-ACO1} transcripts are expressed predominantly in mature fruit with either very low levels (Figure 3.14) or lower levels (Figure 3.15) of expression in young fruit, while \textit{MD-ACO2} transcripts are abundant in mature fruit, and either abundant (Figure 3.14) or expressed at a lower level (Figure 3.15) in young fruit, and then decline in mature green leaves and initial leaves. In contrast, \textit{MD-ACO3} transcripts are highest in initial leaves and decline in mature green leaves, young fruit and then expression is very low in mature fruit.

The \textit{pAP4} gene (designated as \textit{MD-ACO1} in this thesis) from apple fruit, (designated the ripening-specific ACO by Ross \textit{et al.}, 1992), was found to be up-regulated during the fruit ripening of Gala, Braeburn and Granny Smith. Expression in Gala was detected earlier than in
Braeburn and Granny Smith cultivars by Atkinson et al., (1998), relative to the internal baseline levels of ethylene concentration for each of the cultivars. The pAP4 clone (MD-ACOI) accumulated in the seeds of abscising apple fruitlets reaching a level nearly 1,000 times higher than in non abscising fruitlets (Cin et al., 2005). In the cortex, the pattern of expression appeared to be quite similar to that observed in seed, although transcripts accumulated at a level 10 times lower (Cin et al., 2005). In this study, the young fruit (~ 2 cm diameter) would have been non abscising since the levels of MD-ACOI transcript are not abundant. However, in a study by Lara and Vendrell (2000), no protein was detected using antibodies raised against the pAEI2 clone (also designated as MD-ACO1 in this thesis) during the preclimacteric stage of Granny Smith apples. Similarly, using antibodies raised against the pAEI2 clone (MD-ACO1), Dilley et al., (1995) found that protein was not detectable in apples prior to the onset of the ethylene climacteric but increased markedly as the climacteric developed. Further, that mRNA (clone pAEI2) encoding MD-ACO1 accumulated to high levels over the course of the ethylene climacteric. Ross et al., (1992) found ACO (clone pAP4) probes not to hybridize to young immature apple fruit tissue extract. However, as ripening progressed the degree of hybridization increased. Such an increase in apple ACO mRNA transcript (Dilley et al., 1995) would correspond with the climacteric rise in ethylene biosynthesis from the mature green stage (LeLievre et al., 1997; Bleccker and Kende, 2000; Giovannoni, 2001) of apple fruit ripening. In this study, the MD-ACO1 probes hybridized strongly with fragments from mature fruit tissue, less intensely with fragments from young immature fruit, and no hybridization was detectable with fragments from either young or mature leaf tissue.

MD-ACO1 in this study appears to have a similar expression pattern in fruit tissue to both the pTOM13 (Hamilton et al., 1990; 1991) also known as LE-ACO1 (Barry et al., 1996; Blume and Grierson, 1997) and to the LE-ACO4, both from tomato (Nakatsuka et al., 1998), as well as PP-ACO1 from peach (Ruperti et al., 2001; Rasori et al., 2003; Moon and Callahan, 2004) and PA-ACO1 from apricot (Mbéguié-A-Mbéguié et al., 1999). Both LE-ACO1 and LE-ACO4 are expressed in immature green and mature green fruit, with the abundance increasing greatly during the climacteric, particularly for LE-ACO1 (Nakatsuka et al., 1998) which appears ≥ two fold higher than LE-ACO4. In common with MD-ACO1, LE-ACO4 is not detectable in leaf tissue (Nakatsuka et al., 1998), whereas LE-ACO1 transcripts have been observed to increase (up to 27-fold) at the onset of leaf senescence (Barry et al., 1996). Given that both the tomato LE-ACO1 and the peach PP-ACO1 genes are expressed abundantly during the fruit climacteric and during leaf senescence, the prediction that either MD-ACO1 or MD-ACO2 are good candidates for the senescence associated gene (SAG) in apple leaf seems reasonable. However, from the results of this thesis neither MD-ACO1 nor MD-ACO2 have been observed to fulfil the role of a SAG in leaf tissue. Indeed, if either MD-ACO1 or MD-ACO2 were found to be SAG
genes in leaf tissue, any efforts to delay senescence through the manipulation of these genes would presumably also delay fruit ripening.

MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 most closely align with pear (Pyrus pyrifolia and Pyrus communis) ACO on the phylogenetic tree (Figure 3.8). MD-ACO2 shares the closest alignment with an ACO (PP-AOX4) expressed in the immature fruit of pear, MD-ACO1 is also associated with ACO expressed in pear fruit (JP-AOXI and ACO1) and unripe mature pear fruit (PC-AOXI). In contrast MD-ACO3 shares the closest alignment with an ACO from ripe pear fruit (JP-AOX3, PP-AOX2A and PP-AOX2B). Unfortunately, the literature does not appear to contain data on pear Aeo expression in leaf tissue, differential expression or even temporal expression in the fruit, but rather studies have focused on the role of ethylene, cold treatment and ACO accumulation postharvest in pear fruit ripening (Lelièvre et al., 1997; Hiwasa et al., 2003; Gao et al., 2002; Foneseca et al., 2004). For example, 21 days after harvest following cold treatment and ethylene treatment the ACO transcripts from the pear cv. Roche (RP-ACOI) double (Foneseca et al., 2004). ACO from softening and wounded peach fruit (PP-ACOI) is also within the grouping of MD-ACO3 (Figure 3.8). However, because a gene has been found to be expressed in a certain tissue, and entered into the Genbank it cannot be assumed that it is expressed predominantly in that tissue rather than another tissue, or that another member of the gene family is not present in a greater abundance. In other words, there is no indication of the relative quantity of expression compared to another member of the gene family. Broadly, the peach ACO (PP-ACOI and PP-ACO2) each fall into one of two groups, PP-ACOI in the MD-ACO3 grouping, and PP-ACO2 in the MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 grouping (Figure 3.8). Interestingly PP-ACOI resembles MD-ACO3 as they are both expressed in young fully expanded green leaf tissue, but PP-ACOI also resembles MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 in that they are all expressed abundantly during the climacteric necessary for fruit ripening. However, unlike any of the MD-ACO genes, the PP-ACOI is a SAG gene as it is expressed abundantly in senescing leaf tissue. Interestingly, the observation that pMEL1 from melon is expressed in climacteric fruit and wounded leaf tissue but was undetectable in both preclimacteric fruit and unwounded leaf tissue (Balague et al., 1993), raises the possibility that MD-ACOI mRNA may also be detected in wounded leaf tissue. It has been shown that the MD-ACOI (clone pAP4) promoter lacks wound-response-elements (WUNs) and wound inducible (WIN) nucleotide sequences, and therefore may not be activated by wounding (Atkinson et al., 1998). However, Ross et al., (1992) observed a wound response in preclimacteric apple fruit, with a wounding response time of from 5 h to 24 h, which raises the question of whether either the MD-ACO2 or the MD-ACO3 promoter contains WIN and/or WUN boxes. As MD-ACOI (clone pAP4) has been reported to have two potential ethylene response elements (ERE)(Atkinson et al., 1998),
an ethylene wound response could be augmented by MD-ACO1 (but the gene expression may not be immediately induced by wounding).

The probability that MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 may also be tightly controlled by developmental and environmental stimuli is overwhelming, given the well established temporal and tissue specific expression of ACO genes from other plant species. In common with MD-ACO2, both LE-ACO1 and LE-ACO4 transcript expression is ripening specific in fruit, but unlike MD-ACO2, LE-ACO4 has not been observed in leaf tissue. Therefore, LE-ACO4 may correspond more closely with MD-ACO1 as both are expressed in the fruit tissue but appear not to be expressed in leaf tissue. MD-ACO2 and LE-ACO1 transcripts are expressed in both leaf and fruit tissue, but the senescence specific accumulation of LE-ACO1 mRNA has not been observed in MD-ACO2 expression patterns. Neither MD-ACO3 nor LE-ACO3 exhibit classic fruit ripening expression patterns, and both are present in leaf and fruit tissue. However, unlike MD-ACO3, where transcripts predominate in young bourse shoot leaves, LE-ACO3 has not been reported in young leaf tissue, but is rather associated with leaf senescence where transcript abundance is approximately 50% that of LE-ACO1 (Barry et al., 1996). Further, the transient expression of LE-ACO3 contrasts with the apparent developmentally regulated pattern observed in MD-ACO3 transcript accumulation.

Neither MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 nor MD-ACO3 appear to be expressed predominantly in senescing leaf tissue. Many studies have identified at least one member of the ACO gene family as a senescence associated gene (SAG), for example TR-ACO3 and TR-ACO4 in white clover (Hunter et al., 1999; Chen and McManus, 2006), LE-ACO1 in tomato (John et al., 1995) and CP-ACO2 in papaya (Chen et al., 2003). Both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are expressed predominantly in mature fruit which may be associated with senescence, and MD-ACO3 is more likely to be a photosynthetic associated gene (PAG), as it is expressed predominantly in initial bourse shoot leaf tissue. However, MD-ACO3 is also expressed in mature green fully expanded leaf tissue, MD-ACO2 is also expressed in initial bourse shoot leaf tissue and mature green fully expanded leaf tissue. Therefore MD-ACO2 may also be a PAG.

Overall, these gene expression studies indicate that each of the three MD-ACO sequences are encoded by distinct genes as their expression patterns appear to be different. However, although MD-ACO1 has not been identified in leaf tissue in this study, it can not be concluded that MD-ACO1 is not present in apple leaf tissue. Further, the possibility can not be excluded that MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are in fact heterozygous allelic forms of MD-ACO1 (MD-ACO1-1 and MD-ACO1-2). However, it may be unusual that one allele is expressed in leaf tissue and the other allele is not expressed at all in leaf tissue. For example, in the case of the ACS1-1 and
ACS1-2 alleles reported by Sunako et al. (1999), one allele is expressed more frequently than the other allele in the same tissue, so that it is the level of expression which is different for each of the alleles in the fruit tissue. For MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 the difference is that they are expressed differentially in leaf tissue but exhibit very similar temporal expression in the fruit tissue. Therefore, the expression patterns of MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 may support the notion that they are encoded by two distinct genes.
4.3 Expression and Characterisation of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 as recombinant proteins

ACO extracted from apple fruit tissue has been extensively characterized (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992; Kuai and Dilley, 1992; Dong et al., 1992b; Poneleit and Dilley, 1993; Pirrung et al., 1993; Dilley et al., 1993; Dupille et al., 1993 and Mizutani et al., 1995). In these studies genes that are most similar to MD-ACO1 have been expressed both in the E. coli strain BL-21 (clone pAE12) using the pET20b+ vector (Charng et al., 1997; 2001), and in the yeast strain F808 (clone pAP4) using the pYES2 vector (Wilson et al., 1993). While the investigation of MD-ACO1 (pAE12) inserted into the pET20b+ vector (designated pAE20) focussed on the degradation of α-aminoisobutyric acid and structure-function studies on the CO2 binding site of ACO, both the $K_m$ for ACC ($K_m^{AC}$) and the $K_{cat}$ are reported for the isoform purified to homogeneity from the E. coli background, together with the specific activity. Recently, MD-ACO1 (pAE12) inserted into the pET20b+ vector and expressed in E. coli (strain BL-21) was used for mutagenesis studies, and the $K_m^{AC}$, $K_{cat}$ and specific activity are documented (Yoo et al., 2006). Activities are also reported by Charng et al. (1997) for a crude extract of the recombinant enzyme from the prokaryotic cells both in the presence of CO2 (3.2 nmol mg$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$) and in the absence of CO2 (0.06 nmol mg$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$). For MD-ACO1 (pAP4) expressed in yeast the enzyme was not extracted from the eukaryotic cells for characterization, so that the ACO assays were conducted by adding ACC (10 μL of 100 mM), ascorbic acid (6 μL of 0.5 mM) and FeSO$_4$ (4 μL of 1 mM) directly to 980 μL aliquots of yeast cell culture, containing the pAP4 inserted into the pYES2 vector (designated pAPY4). The production of ethylene-forming ability of MD-ACO1 expressed in yeast is reported to have similar characteristics to those observed in vitro for partially purified (Dilley et al.,1993; Kuai and Dilley, 1992) and purified to near homogeneity (Dong et al., 1992b) fruit tissue from the Golden Delicious cultivar, but was depended on the growth phase of the culture. In contrast to the above studies, the research in this thesis has investigated the kinetic properties of three MD-ACO isoforms expressed in E. coli (strain BL-21) using the pProEX-1 vector, (and it should be noted that both the MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 mRNA transcripts were extracted from the leaf tissue of the Gala cultivar prior to cloning, so both genes are expressed in the leaves of apple). This is the first study, therefore, that has compared multiple members of the apple gene family in this way.

4.3.1 Kinetic Properties of the MD-ACO Isoforms

Each of the three apple ACO cDNAs were expressed in E. coli and translated as fusion proteins containing a His-tag on the N-terminus, purified, and then the apparent kinetic properties of the enzymes were analyzed. Over expression of the recombinant MD-ACOs in E. coli resulted in
degradation of the protein as judged by fragmentation, which was particularly evident for the MD-ACO3 isoform (while degradation appeared to be much less for MD-ACO2 than for the other MD-ACO isoforms). Although all three of the MD-ACO isoforms have an autocleavage site between lysine at position 186 (L$^{186}$) and phenylalanine at position 187 (F$^{187}$) which would generate fragments of ca. 28.7 kDa, degradation products occur predominantly at ca. 35 kDa (Figure 3.19). Even so, anion exchange was used to separate the active enzyme from the inactive degraded forms of the protein (as well as from other E. coli chelating proteins), and it was this purified fraction that was used for further analysis.

A comparison of the kinetic parameters of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 from this study with the MD-ACO1 (pAE20) isoform expressed in E. coli (Charng et al., 2001), tomato LE-ACO1, LE-ACO2 and LE-ACO3 expressed in yeast (pBEJ15; Bidonde et al., 1998), MD-ACOs purified from mature Golden Delicious fruit tissue (Dong et al., 1992b; Dupille et al., 1993; Pirrung et al., 1993) and for white clover, an isoform purified from senescent leaf tissue (designated SE1) and an isoform purified from senescent leaf tissue (designated MGI) (Gong and McManus, 2000), are all shown as Table 4.1. Crude and partially purified ACO extracts have not been included in this comparison, as such extracts are more likely to contain more than one isoform, and these extracts may also affect the affinity of the ACOs for substrate. For example, the K$_m^{ACC}$ of the partially purified enzyme from carnation flowers (Kosugi et al., 1997) ranged from 111 μM to 125 μM compared with 425 μM determined for the crude enzyme (Nijenhuis De Vries et al., 1994). The tomato and white clover ACOs have been included as they are the only studies where more than one isoform of a species has been characterized, and therefore comparisons of ACO can be made both within and between species. Also a comparison between ACO expressed in the eukaryotic background (Bidonde et al., 1998) as opposed to ACO expressed in the prokaryotic background (Charng et al., 1997; 2001; this thesis), together with ACOs purified from plant tissue (Dong et al., 1992b; Dupille et al., 1993; Pirrung et al., 1993; Gong and McManus, 2000), may be meaningful.

For these studies shown as Table 4.1, the molecular masses are broadly similar (35 - 40 kDa), white clover has a neutral isoelectric point (pI) while the tomato isoforms are on the acidic side (6.1 to 6.8) and the theoretical pI of the recombinant apple isoforms are the most acidic ranging from 5 to 5.52. The tomato isoforms expressed in yeast share the same pH optimum, which is, incidentally, consistent with the pH of 7.2 used for LE-ACO1 expressed in E. coli (strain BL-21) using the pET-11a or pET-3c expression plasmid (Zhang et al., 1995; Thrower et al., 2001). As well, the same requirements for FeSO$_4$ and NaHCO$_3$ are determined, although the K$_m^{ACC}$ of the senescence associated isoform (LE-ACO1) differs from the LE-ACO2 and LE-
### Table 4.1: Comparison of the Kinetic Properties of Recombinant and Purified ACOs from Apple and Other Species

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Kinetic Parameters</th>
<th>Apple</th>
<th>Tomato</th>
<th>White Clover</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Recombinant in <em>E. coli</em></td>
<td>Purified (mature fruit tissue)</td>
<td>Recombinant in Yeast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>MD-ACO1</td>
<td>MD-ACO2</td>
<td>MD-ACO3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kDa native denatured</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(aa.314)</td>
<td>(aa.330)</td>
<td>(aa.322)</td>
<td>(aa.314)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pI</td>
<td>5.24</td>
<td>5.52</td>
<td>5.28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5.15</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pH</td>
<td>7.2</td>
<td>7.8</td>
<td>7.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FeSO₄ μM</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ascorbate mM</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaHCO₃ mM</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kₘ µM</td>
<td>3.8939</td>
<td>3.40103</td>
<td>2.2445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3.8274</td>
<td>3.9191</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vₘₐₓ nmol</td>
<td>3.1515</td>
<td>3.1294</td>
<td>3.1894</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3.1773</td>
<td>3.1838</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kₗₘₐₓ s⁻¹</td>
<td>0.066</td>
<td>0.0344</td>
<td>0.0914</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Notes:**
- Theoretical pI: Used in assay, without direct evidence of optimization.
- pProEx-1, pGEX:
- In the absence of NaHCO₃/CO₂:
- In the presence of 10 mM of NaHCO₃
ACO3 isoforms. In contrast, the white clover isoforms (MG1 and SE1) have different pH optima and require different concentrations of FeSO₄ and ascorbate, as well as having distinctly different $K_m^{\text{ACC}}$s. The senescence associated isoforms of tomato (LE-ACO1) and white clover (SE1) both have the highest $K_m^{\text{ACC}}$ in their respective families. Interestingly, the $K_m^{\text{ACC}}$ of the LE-ACO isoforms more than doubles in the presence of NaHCO₃ (10 mM), which suggests that were the white clover SE1 isoform to have been assayed in the presence of less NaHCO₃ (10 mM rather than 24 mM) perhaps the $K_m$ would be similar to that of its tomato counterpart (LE-ACO1). The $K_m^{\text{ACC}}$ for recombinant MD-ACOs expressed in E. coli is high when compared with LE-ACOs expressed in yeast or from purified white clover leaf or apple fruit tissue, with the exception of the SE1 isoform from white clover. However, MD-ACO1 (Chang et al., 2001) was assayed in the presence of 100 mM of NaHCO₃ and the MD-ACOs in this study were assayed in the presence of 30 mM of NaHCO₃, which could have decreased the affinity of the enzymes expressed in E. coli for the ACC substrate (although in the absence of NaHCO₃ the $K_m^{\text{ACC}}$ s for all three MD-ACOs was only slightly lower). Both LE-ACO3 expressed in mature green leaf tissue and LE-ACO2 expressed in flower tissue share identical kinetic properties (with the exception of the $pI$), and both isoforms exhibit a very similar $K_m^{\text{ACC}}$ to an ACO purified from mature apple fruit (Pirrung et al., 1993). This may suggest that the kinetic variation in the enzyme is not tissue-specific, but could also be due to intra-species variation. The molecular mass of the TR-ACO (SE1) and the apple ACO (Dong et al., 1992b) are both higher in the native state when compared with the denatured form, which suggests that these proteins may be posttranslationally modified.

The specific activities in this study for MD-ACO1 [14 ± 0.63 nmol mg⁻¹ min⁻¹ (pProEX-1) and 14.9 ±0.5 nmol mg⁻¹ min⁻¹ (pGEX)], for MD-ACO2 [11 ± 1.3 nmol mg⁻¹ min⁻¹ (pProEX-1) and 17.5 ± 0.8 nmol mg⁻¹ min⁻¹ (pGEX)], and for MD-ACO3 [17 ± 0.74 nmol mg⁻¹ min⁻¹ (pProEX-1)], are consistent with other MD-ACOs from purified mature fruit tissue (Dong et al., 1992b; Pirrung et al., 1993). However, the specific activity of MD-ACO1 expressed in E. coli (pET20b) is much higher at 122 ± 13 nmol mg⁻¹ min⁻¹ in the presence of 1 mM of ACC and 129 ± 1 nmol mg⁻¹ min⁻¹ in the presence of 10 mM of ACC (Chang et al., 1997; 2001) than the values determined in the present study. In contrast, the specific activities of LE-ACO1 (25.1 ± 2.1 nmol mg⁻¹ h⁻¹), LE-ACO2 (2.9 ± 0.6 nmol mg⁻¹ h⁻¹) LE-ACO3 (11.5 ± 2.4 nmol mg⁻¹ h⁻¹) expressed in yeast as well as the TR-ACO isoforms MG1 (2.59 ± 0.16 mmol mg⁻¹ min⁻¹), SE1 (7.95 ± .87 nmol mg⁻¹ min⁻¹) are very low when compared with the MD-ACOs in this study. However, in another study the specific activity of MD-ACO1 (1600 nL mg⁻¹ h⁻¹) expressed in E. coli (pET20b) is also very low (Yoo et al., 2006).
The specific activities for each of the MD-ACO, LE-ACO and TR-ACO isoforms are shown as Table 4.2, in which the values of the present study are consistent with the activities determined for the MD-ACOs purified from Golden Delicious fruit (as well as from the partially purified MD-ACO of 20 nmol mg\(^{-1}\) h\(^{-1}\); Ponelet and Dilley, 1993). The specific activity is really a measurement of the purity of the enzyme, and hence is particularly useful during the extraction process. However, the true activity is higher because the activity is time-dependent, and the time resolution of current assays is too low. Of interest (as pear is closely associated phylogenetically with apple), an ACO purified to near homogeneity from pear fruit with an optimum pH of 6.7, an optimum requirement of 10 mM of ascorbate and where 16 % of CO\(_2\) in the gas phase was used, exhibited a specific activity of 77.8 nmol mg\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\) (Vioque and Castellino, 1994). Nevertheless the difference in specific activities may be indicative of the problems encountered when assessing the kinetic parameters of ACOs.

### Table 4.2: Summary of the Specific Activities of ACOs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>References</th>
<th>Isoforms</th>
<th>Specific Activities (nmol mg(^{-1}) min(^{-1}))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(This thesis) expressed in <em>E. coli</em>; pProEX-I</td>
<td>MD-ACO1</td>
<td>14 ± 0.63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pGEX</td>
<td>14.9 ± 0.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pProEX-I</td>
<td>MD-ACO2</td>
<td>11 ± 1.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pGEX</td>
<td>17.5 ± 0.8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pProEX-I</td>
<td>MD-ACO3</td>
<td>17 ± 0.74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charrg <em>et al.</em>, 2001; (<em>pAE20</em>) expressed <em>E. coli</em> in the presence of 1 mM ACC</td>
<td>MD-ACO1</td>
<td>122 ± 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in the presence of 10 mM ACC</td>
<td>129 ± 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yoo <em>et al.</em>, 2006; (<em>pAE12/20</em>) expressed in <em>E. coli</em></td>
<td>MD-ACO1</td>
<td>1.19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dong <em>et al.</em>, 1992b; purified mature fruit tissue</td>
<td>MD-ACO</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dupille <em>et al.</em>, 1993; “ “ “</td>
<td>MD-ACO</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pirrung <em>et al.</em>, 1993; “ “ “</td>
<td>MD-ACO</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bidonde <em>et al.</em>, 1998; expressed in yeast</td>
<td>LE-ACO1</td>
<td>0.416 ± 0.035</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LE-ACO2</td>
<td>0.048 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LE-ACO2</td>
<td>0.191 ± 0.04</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gong and McManus, 2000; purified mature green leaf tissue</td>
<td>MGI</td>
<td>2.59 ± 0.16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>purified senescent leaf tissue</td>
<td>SE1</td>
<td>7.95 ± 0.87</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
MD-ACO1 in this thesis shares the same molecular mass as the recombinant MD-ACO1 expressed in *E. coli* (Chang *et al.*, 2001), as clones *pAE20* and *pAP4* have identical nucleotide sequences, as well as theoretical pI, pH, and their requirements for FeSO$_4$ and ascorbate. In contrast, the $K_m$ for ACC is lower for the MD-ACO1 in this study when compared with the MD-ACO1 of Yoo *et al.* (2006) and Chang *et al.* (2001), probably due to the much higher amount of NaHCO$_3$ (100 mM) and CO$_2$ (4.2% (v/v)) used in these assays compared to the lesser amount of NaHCO$_3$ (30 mM) used for MD-ACO1 in this study. Further, with the pET20B+ vector expression system a hexahistidine tag is fused to the C-terminus end of the recombinant proteins which may alter enzymatic activity. It is interesting that the catalytic rate ($K_{cat}$) is so similar. MD-ACO1 in this study was inhibited by high levels of FeSO$_4$ (>40 μM), but Pirrung *et al.* (1993) used 100 μM of FeSO$_4$ in the MD-ACO assay which may explain their lower $K_{cat}$. However, it is difficult to measure the initial velocity to obtain the true $K_{cat}$ as the incubation time of the ACO assay is 20 min. Much more sensitive assays for the products of the enzyme need to be developed in order to overcome this problem. [In one study, initial velocities have been measured by the rate of oxygen consumption at 25 °C, pH 7.2, using an YSI model 5300 biological oxygen monitor for LE-ACOs expressed in *E. coli* (Thrower *et al.*, 2001)]. However, Fe$^{2+}$ concentrations higher than 100 μM can be required. For example, an ACO activity from partially purified avocado fruit where neither NaHCO$_3$ nor CO$_2$ were included in the ACO assay, with an optimal requirement for ascorbate of 20 mM, in the presence of 5 mM DTT required 100 μM of Fe$^{2+}$ with increased enzyme activity exhibited at 500 μM (McGarvey and Christoffersen, 1992). Also pear fruit ACO, purified to near homogeneity requires 200 μM of Fe$^{2+}$ to maintain full enzyme activity (Vioque and Castellino, 1994). The $K_m$ for MD-ACO from purified apple fruit has also been observed to increase in the presence of 4% (v/v) CO$_2$ from 28 μM to 121 μM (Fernández-Maculet *et al.*, 1993). Using MD-ACO from partially purified apple tissue in the presence of 5% and 20% (v/v) CO$_2$, the $K_m$ for ACC was observed to increase from 2 μM to 7 μM and 20 μM respectively (Poneleit and Dilley, 1993). The $K_m$ values for the MD-ACO1 isoform expressed in *E. coli* are higher when compared with the purified MD-ACO from apple tissue, which again may be due to the different NaHCO$_3$ levels (Table 4.1), or to the expression of a eukaryotic protein in a prokaryotic background.

The molecular mass of the native MD-ACO determined by electrospray mass spectrometry is 35.3 amu/kDa (Pirrung *et al.*, 1993), consistent with the molecular mass of the denatured MD-ACO1 in this study and for the recombinant MD-ACO1 of Chang *et al.* (2001), as well as for MD-ACO purified from apple tissue (Dong *et al.*, 1992b). However, a molecular mass of ca. 40 kDa for MD-ACO purified from apple has been observed following SDS-PAGE and coomassie staining (Pirrung *et al.*, 1993) and following SDS-PAGE and silver staining (Dupille *et al.*, 1993), which is similar to the molecular mass of the native protein determined by gel filtration
of 39 kDa (Dong et al., 1992b; Dupille et al., 1993). Even given the limitations of both SDS-PAGE (proteins can behave anomalously on SDS-PAGE) and gel filtration for the determination of protein size, these discrepancies in molecular mass may be explained by posttranslational processing, but it seems odd that the native protein has a lower mass than the denatured protein. It could however be that the proteins denatured by gel electrophoresis are the higher mass isoforms of MD-ACO3 (36.3 kDa), and particularly MD-ACO2 (37.5 kDa) described in this study.

For MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 in this study, the $V_{\text{max}}$ decreased in the absence of NaHCO₃ by more than 50 % (Figure 3.27), which is in agreement with ACO from partially purified apple fruit (Poneleit and Dilley, 1993; Mizutani et al., 1995), ACO from apple fruit purified to near homogeneity (Ferández-Maculet et al., 1993) and from avocado fruit purified to near homogeneity (McGarvey and Christoffersen, 1992) where increased CO₂ concentrations increased the $V_{\text{max}}$, by as much as 10-fold. However, the non-enzymatic breakdown of ACC to give ethylene by iron and hydrogen peroxide (the Fenton Reaction) is also stimulated in the presence of HCO₃⁻/CO₂, (McRae et al., 1983; Smith and John, 1993). The $V_{\text{max}}$ values in vitro for the recombinant MD-ACOs determined in this study were proportional to the amount of enzyme in the MD-ACO assay mixture even though the Michaelis constant ($K_m^{\text{ACC}}$) remained unchanged (refer Figure 3.26). These findings are in agreement with Fernández-Maculet and Yang, (1992) using crude apple extracts with incubation times up to 2 h (at 30 °C), and McGarvey and Christoffersen (1992) using ACO activities from partially purified avocado.

ACO is an aerobic enzyme. In the present study, ambient dioxygen (O₂; 23 % by mass) levels would have been present in the atmosphere prior to the sealing of the vacutainer (ca. 0.0278 mL O₂ dissolves in 1 mL H₂O at 30 °C), and shaking would have helped aerate the medium. Neither CO₂ nor O₂ levels were measured in this study, although the concentration of HCO₃⁻ (substituting for CO₂) was known. However, ambient CO₂ (approximately 0.03 % (v/v)) and O₂ levels would have been present prior to sealing the vacutainer for the 20 min incubation period and so should not be limiting in the ACO reaction. Nevertheless, due to the variations in added CO₂ (both in the gas phase and as NaHCO₃) and O₂ used by researchers, direct comparisons between the activities of different ACOs (both within and between species) is often fraught with ambiguity.

MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 in this thesis display very similar kinetic properties overall and therefore the isoforms are unable to be distinguished. However, a number of factors may better unravel the kinetic properties of these enzymes. For example, although the criteria used in this study to determine the optimal concentration of NaHCO₃ required for MD-ACO
activation was based on the optimal $V_{\text{max}}$, given the observation, from many studies, that increased concentrations of NaHCO$_3$ increases both the $V_{\text{max}}$ and the $K_m^{\text{ACC}}$ (Poneleit and Dilley, 1993; Charng et al., 1997; Bidonde et al., 1998) it may be more relevant when optimizing NaHCO$_3$ to take both values into consideration. In this study all MD-ACOs were maximally activated with 30 mM of NaHCO$_3$, but were completely inhibited in the presence of 60 mM of NaHCO$_3$. For MD-ACOs purified from mature apple fruit, NaHCO$_3$ above 10 mM gave maximal activity (Dong et al., 1992b) but another study found that NaHCO$_3$ followed saturating behaviour up to 5 mM and then became inhibitory, so that at 50 mM the enzyme activity had decreased by 50 % (Pirrung et al., 1993). These values suggest that less NaHCO$_3$ is required for optimal enzymatic activity for MD-ACO purified from mature apple fruit when compared with the concentration required for recombinant MD-ACOs expressed in E. coli.

Similarly, although ACO exhibit an absolute requirement in vitro for ascorbate, the amount required for optimal activity of the MD-ACOs purified from mature apple fruit (1 to 10 mM), is lower when compared with the amount of ascorbate required for recombinant MD-ACOs (20 to 30 mM) activity. Further, the lower ascorbate requirements also give maximal activity for the tomato isoforms expressed in yeast and for TR-ACO purified from white clover leaf tissue. It is interesting that increased concentrations of ascorbate have been observed to decrease the MD-ACO activities (in this study), which is consistent with the LE-ACOs expressed in yeast (Bidonde et al., 1998), the LE-ACO1 expressed in E. coli (Zhang et al., 1995) and in the MGI and SE1 isoforms purified from white clover leaf tissue (Gong and McManus, 2000). Again these values suggest that the ACO requirement for substrates and co-factors is different for the enzyme expressed in yeast or purified from plant tissue when compared with MD-ACO expressed in E. coli.

Another factor is that the His-tag may affect MD-ACO activity differentially. For although the manufacturers of the plasmid vector (pProEX-1) (Gibco-BRL, Life Technologies) report the non-interference of the His-tag in terms of enzyme activity, the possibility can not be entirely ruled out. For example, in this study expression of MD-ACO2 in both the pProEX-1 vector and the pGEX vector resulted in the translation of proteins which exhibit very different kinetic properties even though they were both expressed in the E. coli strain BL-21. Such a disparity in the activity of MD-ACO2 expressed in pProEX-1, when compared with expression in the pGEX vector, suggests that the extra 24 amino acids making up the His-tag may be influencing enzymatic activity. However, a simple interference of the activity of MD-ACO1 following expression in either vector (pGEX or pProEX-1) is not evident in this study, as the enzyme exhibited similar kinetic properties in both vector systems (refer Table 3.13). Although MD-ACO3 expressed in the pGEX vector was of a lower molecular mass than expected and was
found not to be active, MD-ACO3 is active when expressed using the pProEX-1 vector and there is nothing to suggest His-tag interference, but there is also nothing to compare it with either. Although cleavage of the His-tag from the recombinant MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 isoforms was successful (data not shown) approximately 80% of enzyme activity was lost during the procedure (data not shown), and so the removal of the His-tag was not pursued further.

A further possible factor which may explain the higher apparent affinity that MD-ACO, extracted from apple fruit tissue, exhibits for ACC, compared to the recombinant apple ACO expressed in *E. coli*, may reflect the eukaryotic (and specifically the natural plant background) as opposed to the accumulation of the enzyme in the fundamentally different background of the prokaryotic cell. For example, the apparent $K_m^{ACC}$ of recombinant ACO from kiwi fruit expressed in *E. coli* (strain XL1-Blue) using the pGEX-4T-1 vector was 41 $\mu$M, and for the endogenous activity from partially purified fruit tissue 16 $\mu$M (Xu et al., 1998). ACO extracted from avocado fruit and purified to near homogeneity had an apparent $K_m^{ACC}$ of 62 $\mu$M when expressed as a recombinant enzyme in *E. coli* (strain BL-21) using the pET-3c vector (Brunhuber et al., 2000), with a specific activity of 16 nmol mg$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$ (Brunhuber et al., 2000) which is similar to the specific activities determined for the apple ACOs. However, although the tomato isoforms (LE-ACO1, LE-ACO2 and LE-ACO3) expressed in a eukaryotic background (Bidonde et al., 1998) have lower apparent $K_m^{ACC}$ when compared with the MD-ACOs in this study (Table 4.1), for LE-ACO1 expressed in *E. coli* (strain BL-21) using the pET-11a vector, an apparent $K_m^{ACC}$ of 23.3 $\mu$M was determined in the presence of 10 mM of NaHCO$_3$ (Zhang et al., 1995). This is lower than the $K_m^{ACC}$ of 67 $\mu$M in the presence of 10 mM of NaHCO$_3$, and of 30 $\mu$M in the absence of NaHCO$_3$, for LE-ACO1 expressed in yeast (Bidonde et al., 1998).

4.3.2 Thermostability of MD-ACO1, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3

No significant difference in thermostability was found in this study between the MD-ACO isoforms. However, the activities of the enzyme differed significantly between each of the temperatures over time (Table 3.14). ACO in apple is sensitive to high temperature. For example, in this study the half-life ($t_{1/2}$) at 25 °C was determined to be $\sim$ 29 min, at 35 °C the $t_{1/2}$ is $\sim$ 13 min and at an incubation temperature of 45 °C the $t_{1/2}$ is $\sim$ 5 min 30 s (Figure 3.30). A purified ACO from Golden Delicious fruit displayed a loss of activity during turnover when incubated at a temperature of 23 °C, with a $t_{1/2}$ of $\sim$ 2 h (Pirrung et al., 1993). This is a considerably longer time than the $t_{1/2}$ of 29 min found in this study for the recombinant Gala MD-ACOs incubated at a temperature of 25 °C (Table 3.14), indicating that the recombinant
MD-ACOs expressed in *E. coli* (strain BL-21) are less stable than the purified native MD-ACO extracted from apple fruit tissue. The increased lability of the recombinant MD-ACOs in comparison to the native MD-ACO may be due to the lack of acetylation on the N-terminus of the proteins in the prokaryotic background. Such acetylation is likely to occur if the residue following the initiator methionine is alanine (A) as is the case for both the MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 isoforms, whereas for the MD-ACO3 isoform, no removal of the initiator methionine or acetylation of the N-terminus would generally occur as the adjacent residue to the initiator methionine is glutamic acid (E). As the MD-ACOs in this study are fused to His-tags on the N-terminal it is almost certain that such processing could not occur. However, even with the His-tag removed, the mechanisms for processing proteins found in the eukaryotic cells maybe unavailable or unadaptable to the eukaryotic proteins in the prokaryotic background. If MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are stabilized by N-terminus acetylation in the apple tissue, and are thus more resistant to degradation, both isoforms would be expected to have a longer half-life than the MD-ACO3 isoform in the plant, whereas in the prokaryotic background, all three recombinant isoforms appear equally unstable. For example, in this study following incubation at 25 °C for 60 min the loss of enzyme activity decreased ~ 75 % (Table 3.14). For an ACO purified to near homogeneity from pear fruit a t½ of 60 min was exhibited at an incubation temperature of 28 °C (Vioque and Castellano, 1998) which is more stable than the recombinant MD-ACOs expressed in *E. coli* in this study.

In contrast to this study, tomato recombinant ACO expressed in yeast (pBEJ15), showed a variation in thermostability between the three isoforms (Bidonde *et al.*, 1998). For example, following incubation at 45 °C, enzyme activity decreased for LE-ACO1 by 7 fold, for LE-ACO2 by 35 fold and for LE-ACO3 by 4 fold. However, at 29 °C, the t½ of both LE-ACO1 and LE-ACO3 (18 min) differed from LE-ACO2 (24 min). For LE-ACO1 expressed in *E. coli*, the activity decayed with a t½ of ~14 min (Smith *et al.*, 1994). All of these LE-ACO values are within the range determined in this study for recombinant MD-ACO expressed in *E. coli* using the pProEX-1 vector. The maximum activity for all of the recombinant LE-ACO isoforms was found to be at 28-30 °C, with an optima at 29 °C, and for the LE-ACO assays all isoforms were incubated at 29 °C for 15 min (Bidonde *et al.*, 1998).

A purified ACO from Golden Delicious fruit has an optimum activity at a temperature of 26 °C with a sharp inhibition at 35 °C (Dupille *et al.*, 1993), similar to the ethylene forming activity of fresh tissues *in vivo* (Apelbaum *et al.*, 1981). Temperatures of incubation for apple ACO assays vary. For example, for a recombinant apple ACO expressed in *E. coli*, a temperature of 30 °C for 10 to 15 min has been used (Charng *et al.*, 1997; 2001), while 23 °C for 1 h (Pirrung *et al.*, 1993) and 26 °C for 15 min (Dupille *et al.*, 1993) is used for an ACO purified from apple fruit.
tissue. A temperature of 30 °C for 20 min has been used for both an enzyme purified to near homogeneity (Dong et al., 1992b) and for a partially purified activity (Poneleit and Dilley, 1993). For activities using crude extracts of apple fruit conditions of 30 °C for 30 min have been used (Mizutani et al., 1995). In the present study an incubation temperature of 30 °C for 20 min was used. Such a diversity of temperatures and times of incubation used for the apple ACO assay may make direct comparisons between enzyme activities difficult.

Even incubation at 4 °C for 16 h reduced enzyme activity by approximately 80 % in this study, which concurs with a purified ACO from apple fruit tissue incubated under aerobic conditions at 4 °C for 18 h, where approximately 80 % of ACO was lost (Dupille et al., 1993). Incubation of a partially purified ACO from apple fruit stored at 2 °C for 5 h after extraction significantly reduced the activity of ACO (Fernández-Maculet and Yang, 1992). So that storage times may affect the specific activity value, if some of the enzyme is no longer active.

4.3.3 Physiological Significance of the Kinetic Properties of MD-ACOs,

The kinetic properties of the three MD-ACO isoforms are not markedly different, although the physiological environment in which each isoform is active may reflect the developmental status of the tissue. For example, ACC levels increase from approximately 1 nmol g⁻¹ DW in the peel and the pulp of Golden Delicious prior to the climacteric to 57.32 nmol g⁻¹ DW in the peel and 47.19 nmol g⁻¹ DW in the pulp during the apple fruit climacteric (Tan and Bangerth, 2000; Lara and Vendrell, 2000). As the malate decarboxylating system is intimately related to the respiration climacteric (just prior to the malate effect, the fruit begins to produce ethylene) the pH increases as malic acid levels decrease during apple fruit ripening (Hulme and Rhodes, 1971). MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 are both abundant during the fruit climacteric. As fruit tissue becomes more alkaline during ripening an MD-ACO isoform with a higher pH may be expected to predominate. However, MD-ACO1 has the lower pH optimum of 7.2 (with the optimal range from pH 7.0 to 7.5) and the higher affinity for ACC (\( K_m^{\text{ACC}} \) of 89.39 µM), whereas, MD-ACO2 has a slightly higher pH optima of 7.8 (with the optimal range from pH 7.5 to 8.0), the same pH range as has been determined for ACO activities from partially purified avocado fruit (McGarvey and Christoffersen, 1992), and a low affinity for substrate (\( K_m^{\text{ACC}} \) 401 µM in the pProEX-1 vector) and the much slower turnover rate (\( K_{\text{cat}} \) 3.44 \( \times \) 10⁻²). It should be noted that MD-ACO2 expressed in the pGEX vector has an apparent \( K_m^{\text{ACC}} \) of 91.91 µM, which is very similar to that of the MD-ACO1 isoform. Given that the ACC levels are highest during the fruit climacteric, it could be expected that the affinity of the enzyme for its substrate would be less than if ACC were limiting. MD-ACO1 required saturating concentrations of ACC of 0.5 mM, and that of MD-ACO2 varied from 0.5 to 1.0 mM of ACC as a function of the expression vector system. However, there does seem to be more MD-ACO2 in preclimacteric fruit tissue.
relative to the MD-AC01 isoform, where ACC is limiting (Tan and Bangerth, 2000; Lara and Vendrell, 2000), and MD-AC03 is also present in young fruit tissue.

The ACC content in white clover remained constant in developing and mature green tissues and then increased in senescent tissue concomitant with a significant increase in ethylene production (Hunter et al., 1999). As a consequence of the increase in ammonia content as part of the proteolysis and aminotransferase activity (Smart, 1994), the cells may become more alkaline. MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 are expressed in all leaf tissue (including initial leaf tissue, mature green fully expanded leaf tissue and senescent leaf tissue). MD-AC03 is expressed predominantly in young leaf tissue, and has a broader optimal pH range from 7.0 to 8.0, with maximal activity at pH 7.5, an affinity for ACC of $K_m^{ACC}$ of 244.5 μM, and the faster turnover rate ($K_{cat}$ of 9.14 x 10^{-2}). These values suggest that in young apple leaf tissue ACC is not limiting and perhaps there is less need for MD-AC03 to exhibit high affinity for its substrate. Both MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 require saturating concentrations of ACC of 1 mM, although MD-AC02 requires half as much ACC (0.5 mM) when expressed from the pGEX expression vector system. The pH optimum of 7.5 determined for MD-AC03 concurs exactly with the pH of the ACO purified from the mature green leaf tissue (MGI) of white clover (Gong and McManus, 2000). However, the affinity of the MGI isoform for its substrate is higher ($K_m^{ACC}$ of 39.7 μM) when compared with the apparent $K_m^{ACC}$ of MD-AC03, but other studies have found that kiwi fruit and avocado ACOs expressed in E. coli exhibit approximately 50% less affinity for ACC than ACO purified from fruit tissue (Xu et al., 1998; McGarvey and Christoffersen, 1992; Brunhuber et al., 2000). Also this apparent disparity may be a function of the expression vector system (pProEX-1), or it may be that the leaves of apple differ physiologically from the leaves of white clover (a legume).

The affects of NaHCO$_3$ on the activity of the MD-ACOs probably reflects the changing dynamics of the physiological environment of the enzymes in the plant. The observation that when CO$_2$/HCO$_3^-$ concentrations are increased both the $V_{max}$ and the $K_m^{ACC}$ also increased has been made for ACO activities from partially purified mature apple fruit (Poneleit and Dilley, 1993), for recombinant MD-AC01 (pAE20) expressed in E. coli (Chang et al., 1997), for LEACOs expressed in yeast (Bidonde et al., 1998) and for ACO from melon fruit (Smith and John, 1993). Conversely, an increase in the affinity of ACO for ACC in the absence of NaHCO$_3$ has been observed in crude carnation petal extracts (Nijenhuis-De Vries et al., 1994). As CO$_2$ passes very rapidly through membranes, hydrates and dissociates into H$^+$ and HCO$_3^-$ (and probably lowers the intracellular pH), the affinity of ACO for its substrate ACC would likely vary as a consequence of the HCO$_3^-$/CO$_2$ concentrations at or near the active site. If during photosynthesis HCO$_3^-$/CO$_2$ were to become limiting then it could be expected that the affinity of
the enzyme for ACC would increase, whereas it could be that the non-limiting higher HCO$_3^-$
/CO$_2$ levels in non-photosynthetic tissue such as mature fruit may reduce the affinity of an ACO
for substrate. Based on this hypothesis, it may also be that in very young and senescent leaves
(with suboptimal photosynthetic capacity) the HCO$_3^-$/CO$_2$ levels are higher, when compared
with mature green leaves, and as a consequence the affinity of ACO for ACC in these tissues is
lower than in the leaves with full photosynthetic capacity. However, MD-ACO3 (expressed
predominantly in the leaves) has a higher apparent $K_m^{ACC}$ of 244.5 $\mu$M when compared to that
of MD-ACO1 (expressed in apple fruit) of $K_m^{ACC}$ 89.39 $\mu$M. Also for MD-ACO2, which is
expressed in the leaves and also abundantly in climacteric apple fruit, an explanation of any
kind is difficult to make, especially given the extremely high $K_m^{ACC}$ of 401.03 $\mu$M of the
isoform in the pProEX-1 vector when compared with the $K_m^{ACC}$ of 91.91 $\mu$M in the pGEX
vector. If, in this study, the NaHCO$_3$ concentration had been lower it may be that the $K_m^{ACC}$
for all of the MD-ACOs would also have been lowered, which may also have resulted in greater
differentiation between the $K_m^{ACC}$ values determined for each of the isoforms, although Gong
and McManus (2000) included a similar amount of NaHCO$_3$ (24 mM) in the TR-ACO assays
and in mature green leaf tissue the $K_m^{ACC}$ of 39.7 $\mu$M was lower than the $K_m^{ACC}$ of 110 $\mu$M for
ACO obtained from senescent leaf tissue.

Neither MD-ACO2 nor MD-ACO3 were observed to increase during leaf senescence (MD-
ACO1 was not observed in leaf tissue in this study), although the more alkaline pH optimum of
MD-ACO2 and the very low affinity of the enzyme for substrate (expressed from pProEX-1)
would perhaps categorize this isoform as potentially senescence associated, when compared
with the white clover senescence associated isoform (SEI) which exhibited a $K_m^{ACC}$ of 110 $\mu$M
and a pH optimum of 8.5 (Gong and McManus, 2000). However, the senescence associated
tomato isoform (LE-ACO1) expressed in yeast (Bidone et al., 1998) has the same pH optimum
as LE-ACO2 and LE-ACO3 (pH 6.8 to 7.2), and the $K_m^{ACC}$ is lower at 30 $\mu$M (and in the
presence of 10 mM of NaHCO$_3$ a $K_m^{ACC}$ of 67 $\mu$M) when compared with the senescence
associated isoform from white clover and the MD-ACOs in this study (Gong and McManus,
2000). The actual physiological concentrations of ACC, dioxygen, CO$_2$ and Fe$^{2+}$ at the MD-
ACO active site in vivo, the ionic strength or the pH, or indeed if ascorbate is the actual co-
substrate which is oxidized during the conversion of ACC to ethylene, remain largely unknown
in plant tissue, including the leaves of apple. Also, the variation in the physiological conditions
under which MD-ACO is active no doubt depend on many variables, such as the developmental
status of the tree, endogenous circadian clocks, environmental conditions and perhaps MD-ACO
may require other, as yet unidentified, cofactors.

Alternatively, the fact that the C-terminus of each of the three MD-ACO isoforms are different
lengths may be determining their kinetic properties rather than the physiological environment or
their expression patterns. For example, the C-terminus of ACO may play a role in effecting completion of catalytic cycles via assisting in the reduction of an oxidized form of the enzyme after oxidation of ACC (Rocklin et al., 2004). As MD-ACO1 (314 aa), MD-ACO2 (330 aa) and MD-ACO3 (322 aa) have significantly different C termini, any discrepancies in the order of substrate binding arising from kinetic analysis may be due to the different C-termini (Thrower et al., 2001; Brunhuber et al., 2000). Interestingly, the penultimate residue on the C-terminus of MD-ACO2 is a glutamine (Q329) (Figure 3.7). This is of interest as in the solved crystal structure of isopenicillin N synthase (IPNS) obtained without substrate, the penultimate residue on the C terminus (a glutamine at position 330, Q330) projects into the active site such that its side chain is close to the metal (Mn$^{2+}$ substituting for Fe$^{2+}$) (Roach et al., 1995). Upon substrate binding this residue is displaced from the immediate vicinity of the Fe$^{2+}$ (Roach et al., 1997). However, this was not observed in the solved crystal structure of Petunia hybrida ACO (Zhang et al., 2004b), but this may be due to the presence of dimeric and tetrameric forms in the crystal lattice in the absence of the monomer form.

4.3.4 Some Possible Limitations of Expressing MD-ACOs in E. coli

As the apple ACO proteins were expressed in a prokaryotic cell, the mechanisms for processing such as posttranslational modification, chaperone proteins and other biological accessories may be unavailable to the eukaryotic protein in an E. coli background. Therefore, due to incorrect protein folding, and the fine tuning of the tertiary structure necessary for the correct orientation of the active site, the activity of the MD-ACO isoforms may be compromised. For example, the fragmentation of ACO expressed in E. coli may be a direct result of incorrectly folded protein (Zhang et al., 1997), and another artefact of using E. coli has been observed to be the accumulation of the overexpressed proteins as insoluble, and inactive, membrane bound inclusion bodies inside the cell (Marston, 1986; Schein and Noteborn, 1988; Zhang et al., 1995; Lay et al., 1996; Xu et al., 1998; Thrower et al., 2001). The relative proportion of ACO expressed in the soluble form at 37 °C has been observed to be in the order of: kiwi fruit $>$ Arabidopsis $>$ apple $>$ petunia $>$ pea, with pea ACO expressed as insoluble inclusion bodies (Lay et al., 1996). Hence, it may not be valid to compare the kinetic properties of apple ACO expressed in E. coli with purified and partially purified ACO from apple tissue.

Further, although proteins in the cytosol are not glycosylated, many secretory proteins and extracellular integral membrane proteins are glycosylated. All three MD-ACO isoforms have a site for a potential N-glycosidic linkage at residues N$^9$ and S$^{101}$, and MD-ACO2 also has a site for a potential N-glycosidic linkage at residues N$^{323}$ and T$^{325}$. Glycosylation of MD-ACO1 has been investigated by Dupille et al. (1993), but the lack of reactivity towards a mixture of seven different biotinylated lectins together with the absence of N-linked substitution at the potential
glycosylation site in a sequenced peptide found no evidence of glycosylation. However, the possibility of an O-glycosidic bond with the serine or threonine residues, and the possibility that the other isoforms (MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3) are able to be glycosylated, can not be ruled out. As the MD-ACO isoforms are expressed in *E. coli*, the significance of this is that glycosylation which may have occurred in the eukaryotic cell may not be possible within the prokaryotic background.

Similarly, all MD-ACOs contain a RXS motif (R<sup>244</sup> and S<sup>246</sup>), a typical phosphorylation site. If, as proposed, residues R<sup>244</sup> and S<sup>246</sup> bind the carboxyl group of ACC (Kadyrzhanova *et al.*, 1999; Dilley *et al.*, 2003) or NaHCO<sub>3</sub> (Rocklin *et al.*, 1999), then phosphorylation at this site would probably inactivate or inhibit enzyme activity, hence the expression of MD-ACOs in *E. coli* may be an advantage. However, it is unknown whether ACO is phosphorylated *in vivo* or *in vitro*.

The observed similarity between the native and denatured molecular mass of the protein indicates that the apple ACO is active as a monomer (Dong *et al.*, 1992b; Dupille *et al.*, 1993). However, the monomeric, and possible dimeric or tetrameric, form may be more active in eukaryotic cells than in the prokaryotic background. Although evidence gathered to date indicates ACO is active in the monomeric form, it is uncertain whether it is also active in dimeric or tetrameric forms. For example, the crystallographic study of Zhang *et al.* (2004b), of a recombinant isoform from *Petunia hybrida* expressed in *E. coli*, show dimeric and tetrameric interactions that form hydrophobically and electrostatically between the monomers. However, due to the restraints of the crystalline lattice such interactions between adjacent monomers may be artefactual, but the possibility remains that there may be co-operative interactions between adjacent monomers, that may not be possible when ACO is expressed in *E. coli*.

Also there may be a difference between the expression vectors in an *E. coli* background. For example, MD-ACO3 was truncated when expressed from the pGEX expression system, whereas from the pProEX-1 expression system the protein was successfully expressed and active. However, while both MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2 were expressed intact and active in both the pGEX and pProEX-1 expression systems, the MD-ACO2 isoform was more active when expressed from the pGEX vector than when expressed from the pProEX-1 vector, whereas the activity of the MD-ACO1 isoform appeared unaffected by the expression system used. The variation could be random and as a result of less robust DNA repair mechanisms in *E. coli* compared with the eukaryotic system. Alternatively, the His-tag fusion may interfere with the correct tertiary orientation of the active site of the enzyme and may therefore be inhibitory to optimal enzymatic activity.
4.4 ACC Oxidase Accumulation and Gene Expression in the Bourse Shoot Leaves of *Malus domestica*

For the final section of this thesis, the accumulation of the MD-ACO proteins and the gene expression of the *MD-ACOs*, both during leaf and fruit development and in a circadian pattern, were examined. In this study, chlorophyll levels were used as an indicator of the developmental status of the leaf of apple, as the total chlorophyll concentration increased as the leaf matured from initial to a mature fully expanded status (chlorophyll *a* increased relative to chlorophyll *b*), and conversely, total chlorophyll levels decreased during senescence (chlorophyll *a* degraded more quickly than chlorophyll *b*) until necrosis (Figures 3.31 to 3.33). Although a report by Mae *et al.* (1984) suggests that chlorophyll levels are not a good indicator of the developmental status in primary wheat leaves, in this study the leaf carbon assimilation data collected (Figure 3.34) corresponded well with the decrease in chlorophyll levels as senescence progressed.

Polyclonal antibodies raised against either recombinant MD-ACO1 or recombinant MD-ACO3 were used in this study. As MD-ACO2 shares a close identity with MD-ACO1, the reasoning was that the antibody raised against MD-ACO1 would also recognise the MD-ACO2 native protein. Given the great abundance of ACO present in climacteric apple fruit (Dong *et al.*, 1992b; Dilley *et al.*, 1993) the probability is great that both polyclonal antibodies (MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO3) would recognise the protein in this tissue, as given the sequence and binding site data there would be epitopes in common. However, the antibody raised against MD-ACO1 recognizes protein accumulated in climacteric apple, but does not recognize ACO protein accumulated in young fruit, initial leaf tissue or senescent leaf tissue extract (Figure 3.24). These results are in agreement with Dilley *et al.* (1993) who report that antibodies raised against MD-ACO1 (clone *pAE12*) were unable to detect protein in preclimacteric apple (cv. Golden Delicious), nor was *in vivo* or *in vitro* ACO activity detected. Further, no MD-ACO proteins were detected during the preclimacteric stage in the Granny Smith cultivar (Lara and Vendrell, 2000) using antibodies raised against recombinant MD-ACO1 (clone *pAE12*; from Professor S.F. Yang) and also against ACO from apple (from Professor D. Dilley). These data suggest that either very low to undetectable levels of MD-ACO1 (and possibly MD-ACO2) are expressed and translated, or that MD-ACO1 (and possibly MD-ACO2) is absent in preclimacteric apple fruit and leaf tissue. However, MD-ACO2 mRNA was extracted from leaf tissue in this study, so it appears the antibody raised against recombinant MD-ACO1 is not recognizing native MD-ACO2 with the same specificity (Figure 3.24). In contrast, antibodies raised against recombinant MD-ACO3 recognize protein predominantly in young leaf tissue, and also in senescent leaf tissue, and notably in young fruit tissue.
A difference in the molecular masses between the isoforms is detectable using antibodies raised against MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO3 for western blot analysis (Figure 3.24). As the molecular mass predicted from the MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO3 nucleotide sequences in this study are 35.35 kDa and 36.3 kDa respectively it is consistent that MD-ACO1 antibody recognised protein of a lower mass (ca. 35.35 kDa) when compared to that of MD-ACO3 (ca. 36.3 kDa). As the MD-ACO2 isoform has a predicted molecular mass of 37.50 kDa it appears, therefore, as though the antibodies raised against the recombinant MD-ACO1 are not recognising a protein of the higher mass. Although the molecular mass of an ACO purified from apple as determined by gel filtration is 39 - 39.5 kDa (Dong et al., 1992b; Dupille et al., 1993), the vastly more accurate method (as far as protein size determination is concerned) of electrospray mass spectrometry (EMS) showed the mass to be 35.332 ± 5 atomic mass units (amu) (Pirrung et al., 1993), similar to the predicted molecular mass of MD-ACO1 deduced by the nucleotide sequence in this thesis and in other studies (Ross et al., 1992; Dong et al., 1992a). The higher molecular masses (39 to 39.5 kDa) observed for ACO may not necessarily be the MD-ACO1 isoform. For example, an antibody raised against LE-ACO1 has been used to identify MD-ACO1 (Dupille et al., 1993) and the denatured mass of MD-ACO observed by SDS-PAGE is approximately 40 kDa (Dupille et al., 1993; Pirrung et al., 1993). Alternatively, MD-ACO1 could be postranslationally modified, for example by phosphorylation, or associated in some way with a very small peptide which would increase the apparent molecular mass of MD-ACO1 on SDS-PAGE.

### 4.4.1 MD-ACO Accumulation and Gene Expression During Leaf Development

An investigation of the bourse shoot leaf ontogeny in the Gala cultivar was undertaken with respect to the accumulation of the MD-ACO isoforms and the differential gene expression of each of the transcripts throughout development, particularly with regard to mature and senescing tissue. Bourse shoots were pre-tagged (refer section 2.1.1).

In young leaf tissue, from the initial leaf tissue through the young green fully expanded leaf tissue sampled in 2003 and 2004 (Figure 3.35), the MD-ACO1 isoform was not detected (using antibody raised against recombinant MD-ACO1). Although gene expression of the MD-ACO1 transcript was not evident (Figure 3.38), gene expression of the MD-ACO2 transcript was clearly evident in young and mature fully expanded leaf tissue, which indicates that the antibodies raised against recombinant MD-ACO1 are not recognising native MD-ACO2 in the leaf tissue. However, even though MD-ACO2 is expressed in these tissues, it is possible that the MD-ACO2 isoform does not accumulate, perhaps because it is not translated or is degraded quickly, or the absence reflects the greater
difficulty in protein extraction from hardened mature leaves. *MD-ACO3* is expressed in these tissues, and although the translated product is strongly detectable in the young leaf tissue it declined to barely visible levels in the mature green fully expanded leaf tissue, prior to fruit harvest (Figure 3.37).

In this study *MD-ACO1* (transcript and protein) was undetectable in the bourse shoot leaf tissue. Either *MD-ACO1* is not expressed in the leaf tissue or the expression is below the level detectable using the techniques available in this study (Figures 3.35 and 3.38). In contrast both *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3* (transcript and protein) are clearly present in the initial leaf tissue and also in the mature green leaf, middle and basal, tissue of the bourse shoot (Figures 3.36 and 3.38). As the senescence associated genes *LE-ACO*, *PP-ACO* and *CP-ACO2* are expressed both in mature fruit tissue and in senescing leaf tissue, it is unusual that the *MD-ACO* (transcript and protein) which increase in abundance during the climacteric (*MD-ACO1* and *MD-ACO2*; Figures 3.14 and 3.15) do not also show a senescence associated increase at the onset of senescence in the leaves of apple. A likely conclusion, therefore, is that neither *MD-ACO1*, *MD-ACO2* nor *MD-ACO3* are senescence-associated in the leaf tissue. An as yet unidentified *MD-ACO4* may be a candidate, or it may be that in apple leaves ACO is not senescence associated. However, as senescence associated genes have been identified in the leaves of tomato (Holdsworth *et al.*, 1988; Barry *et al.*, 1996; Blume and Grierson, 1997), of peach (Ruperti *et al.*, 2001; Rasori *et al.*, 2003), of melon (Lasserre *et al.*, 1996), of papaya (Chen *et al.*, 2003), of sweet potato (Huang *et al.*, 2001) and also of white clover (Hunter *et al.*, 1999), it seems likely that an as yet unidentified *MD-ACO* will be found to be senescence associated.

In this study bourse shoot leaf tissue was collected over three years (2003, 2004 and 2005), with two or three collections prior to fruit harvest each year, when the leaves were green and fully expanded, and then leaf tissue was collected again two weeks after the fruit had been harvested, at intervals of approximately 10 days. When the colour of the leaves began to change rapidly (the visual onset of senescence) leaf tissue was collected more often, approximately every fifth day. It should be noted, that in this study the fruit was strip-picked rather than harvested over a number of pickings, and so there is an abrupt removal of the fruit. Over this time course neither the *MD-ACO1* transcript nor the translated product were detected in any of these tissues for 2003, 2004 or 2005. While some hybridisation with *MD-ACO2* is detectable prior to fruit harvest in 2003 (Figure 3.38), there is no detectable hybridisation with *MD-ACO2* for 2004 or 2005 post-harvest (Figure 3.39). Antibodies raised against recombinant MD-ACO3 recognise protein of the expected mass (36.3 kDa) in 2003 prior to fruit removal (Figure 3.37) although this is less strong in 2004, and with no protein recognition of the expected molecular mass in
2005 (Figure 3.39). However, in 2005 the MD-ACO3 antibody does faintly recognise some protein of ca. 27 kDa and 30 kDa predominantly prior to harvest but also post-harvest, which could be degraded or fragmented MD-ACO3, or alternatively another MD-ACO isoform. In leaf tissue collected prior to harvest in 2003 there is relatively strong hybridisation with MD-ACO3, less intensely for 2004 and not at all in 2005, which reflects the protein accumulation pattern. It is interesting that both MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 are expressed prior to fruit removal in 2003 (and also in 2004 for MD-ACO3), but expression is undetectable following the removal of the fruit, which suggests that the MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 genes are rapidly down regulated following fruit harvest. However, the lack of hybridisation with MD-ACO3 in 2005 and the lack of hybridisation with MD-AC02 in both 2004 and 2005 prior to fruit removal suggests that the underlying regulation is not a simple one. Similarly, MD-ACO3 which accumulates prior to the removal of the fruit in 2003 and 2004 disappears following fruit harvest. The protein is probably rapidly degraded, rather than not translated as there is not very much protein prior to fruit removal anyway. A possibility may be that antibody raised against recombinant MD-ACO3 is recognising a fourth ACO as the protein recognition is so faint (Figures 3.37 and 3.39). Interestingly, the observation in melon, by Chen et al., (2003) that CP-ACO2 was induced at the very late stage of leaf senescence and fruit ripening, the fully yellowed stage in which the papaya leaf withers, is not consistent with undetectable amounts of MD-ACO2 and of MD-Ae03 post harvest. Apple ACO gene expression and protein accumulation may be affected by the physiological dynamics of fruit removal, or it may simply be coincidence. For example, as leaf tissue samples were always collected at the same time (11 am), it could be that the collection of tissue at another time would have produced quite different results, as the possible circadian and/or diurnal oscillations of MD-ACO may also be affected by environmental (light intensity, temperature) and developmental (hormones, sugars) cues. A more controlled study is probably necessary under controlled environmental conditions to examine the possible interplay between fruit and leaf tissue in the regulation of ACO. Nevertheless, this study indicates that the regulation of MD-ACO in the bourse shoot leaves of the Royal Gala cultivar may be changed following fruit removal.

From other studies it is well established that fruit removal does influence leaf physiology in apple trees (Tartachnyk and Blanke, 2004) and peach trees (Nii, 1997), particularly in regard to the accumulation of sugars and starch (Nii, 1997), although it is unclear or controversial as to the nature of the changes. For example, delayed apple fruit harvest has been observed to enhance autumn leaf photosynthesis, delay chlorophyll degradation and the nitrogen content declined less rapidly when compared with the leaves from the trees where the fruit had been harvested (Tartachnyk and Blanke, 2004). Such an apparent delaying of apple leaf senescence by delaying the fruit harvest, and conversely inducing the earlier onset of senescence by
removing the fruit, may underlie the regulation of MD-AC02 and MD-AC03, as both MD-AC02 and MD-AC03 were expressed (and MD-AC03 accumulated) prior to fruit removal, but were undetectable following fruit harvest. Following fruit removal from peach trees, the sorbitol content increased in parallel with the accumulation of starch and remained high, but the sucrose content did not change markedly (Nii, 1997). As sorbitol is the major carbohydrate in mature Gala apple leaves (Zhou et al., 2001), and high sugar levels have been reported to repress the transcription of photosynthetic genes (Sheen, 1990), and the over expression of hexokinase was reported to reduce photosynthesis and induce leaf senescence (Dai et al., 1999), there may be a regulatory system whereby the accumulation of sorbitol in the leaves of apple (or peach or pear) could repress the gene expression the MD-AC02 and MD-AC03.

Perhaps a more accurate measurement of the presence of MD-ACO in senescing apple leaves would be to collect leaves at different senescent stages on the same day (identified by colour similarity perhaps), rather than by pre-tagging. This is because the leaves of apple were observed, on any one day in autumn, to be at different senescence stages on the same tree and even on the same bourse shoot. The apple leaves were also observed to often become more progressively wounded (as by pathogens) as senescence progressed (the observation was made in this study that the bourse shoot leaves were often at a more advanced stage of senescence in comparison to the extension shoot leaves).

4.4.2 MD-ACO Accumulation and Gene Expression in Leaves over a 24 h Period

To complete the study on MD-ACO gene expression and MD-ACO protein accumulation in leaf tissue, expression/accumulation was examined in terms of a circadian rhythm. By definition, a circadian rhythm is one that persists for a period of approximately 24 h under constant conditions in the absence of an external timing cue (Barak et al., 2000), and a diurnal rhythm is one that fluctuates between light and dark photoperiods.

In this study, bourse shoots of approximately 50 cm in length were tagged prior to sampling, and leaves were collected from positions 5, 6 and 7 on the bourse shoot for analysis (refer section 2.1). For the collection of leaf samples during the dark phase, (safe) green light was not used, and this may have affected the diurnal expression of ACO. Circadian analysis was not undertaken under controlled environmental conditions in this study. ACO gene expression has been observed to cycle in a diurnal and also in a circadian rhythmic pattern in Stellaria longipes (Kathiresan et al., 1996) and in sorghum (Finlayson et al., 1999), under controlled environmental conditions. Of the two ACO genes in sorghum (Sb-ACO1 and Sb-ACO2), the
Discussion

*Sb-AC02* was expressed in a diurnal rhythm in young 5 day old seedlings, whilst the expression of the *Sb-AC01* transcript remained unchanged. In the present study, the expression of both *MD-AC02* and *MD-AC03* fluctuated in a similar way over a 24 h period (Figures 3.40 and 3.43).

*Sb-AC02* showed strong diurnal fluctuations under simulated high-shade conditions of low-irradiance, far-red-enriched light (with gene expression undetectable during the dark periods, over 3 days), but *Sb-AC02* exhibited a weak circadian pattern under constant light and temperature (27 °C) over 48 h, and a damping of the rhythm with time. Whereas, under simulated light conditions (relatively bright, high red: far-red light) diurnal rhythmic expression could not be detected as the level of *Sb-AC02* expression was extremely low, and there was no circadian rhythm. These data suggest that *ACO* gene expression is stimulated under high shade conditions in a strong diurnal pattern, in young sorghum seedlings under a 12 h/12 h photoperiod and a 31 °C/22 °C thermoperiod. A strong diurnal rhythm was also elicited in *Stellaria longipes* ACO (*Sl-AC01*) over a 4 day period under a 16 h photoperiod (16 h at 22 °C and 8 h at 18 °C), with the maximum mRNA abundance occurring 5 h after the lights were switched on and the minimum abundance was in the middle of the dark phase (Kathiresan et al., 1996). Further, as the *Sl-AC01* diurnal fluctuation was maintained over 4 days of continuous illumination, and also over 4 days of continuous darkness this is a nice demonstration of the endogenous circadian regulation of *ACO* gene expression. However, the damping of the oscillations under constant light (Kathiresan et al., 1996; Finlayson et al., 1999) or constant dark conditions suggests that external cues are necessary for the initiation and perhaps the coordination of the rhythmic expression of *ACO*, which may not occur spontaneously.

Both *MD-AC02* and *MD-AC03* were expressed in strong diurnal fluctuations over 24 h (from noon 06.04.05), in the bourse shoot leaves, when the fruit was left on the tree after the commercial harvest date (02.03.05). Except for *MD-AC03* expression at 3 am, expression for both genes is undetectable during the dark period from 6 pm until 6.45 am (Figure 3.43). As in this study, Finlayson et al. (1999) collected samples at three hourly intervals, and interestingly at the first data point of each of the light periods *Sb-AC02* expression is undetectable, which seems to suggest that *Sb-AC02* is induced by light (and/or temperature), and that time (within three hours; sampling times are not given) is needed for gene expression to occur. In the present study, no such lag period is apparent, as *MD-AC0* gene expression is observed in the first sampling following sunrise (with the except of 2005 without fruit), perhaps due to the gradual change which occurs at sunset and sunrise when compared with the abrupt change of the controlled environment (light and temperature). Further, any lag-time may have been picked up if the sampling times had been shorter (less than 3 h). Interestingly, *MD-AC02* and
MD-ACO3 expression is observed approximately 3 h after sunset in November 2003, and also in April 2004 when MD-ACO2 expression occurred approximately 3 h after sunset. However, this phenomenon is not observed in April 2005 for either MD-ACO2 or MD-ACO3. There are many variables which could come into play when comparing ACO expression in young sorghum seedlings (5 days), Stellaria longipes from the wild of an unknown age, and 10 year old fruiting apple trees. In the present study over the same 24 h (from noon 06.04.05) in the absence of fruit (harvested on 02.03.05) neither MD-ACO2 nor MD-ACO3 expression was detectable (Figure 3.42), which suggests that in the bourse shoot leaves the fruit status of the tree may also alter the regulation of ACO. The plant hormones cytokinin, auxin and abscisic acid are known to display diurnal rhythms (Nováková et al., 2005) and to affect gene expression. For example, in tobacco under a 16 h photoperiod cytokinin activity peaked after 9 h of light to ca. 6 pmol g⁻¹ FW and coincided with the major auxin peak of ca. 250 pmol g⁻¹ FW, and abscisic acid peaked on entering the dark-phase to ca. 800 pmol g⁻¹ FW. Interestingly, the concentration of sorbitol, the major photosynthate in the mature leaves of apple and the major transport form of carbohydrate, increases gradually after dawn and reaches its highest level of 18.0 mg g⁻¹ fresh weight at 4 pm, and then declines to its lowest level of 9.6 mg g⁻¹ at the end of the dark period (Zhou et al., 2001). This may affect the regulation of ACO gene expression in the leaves of apple.

However, the diurnal rhythmicity of MD-ACO in this study was inconsistent. For example, in bourse shoot leaves collected over 24 h, and after the commercial harvest date (27.02.04; Figure 3.41), MD-ACO2 was expressed during the daylight hours (at noon and 3 pm on the 07.04.04, and at 9 am and noon on the 08.04.04), and hence exhibits diurnal oscillations but for an abundance of transcript at 9 pm following sunset (6 pm), and extremely low levels of transcript at 6 am prior to sunrise (at 6.45 am). In contrast MD-ACO3 was expressed over the entire 24 h period with less transcript observed at 6 pm (sunset) and 3 am (Figure 3.41). The MD-ACO3 expression is puzzling as the 2004 and 2005 are clearly different, but may reflect differences in environmental cues. For example, it was windy, raining and cold (temperature from 14 °C in the light period to 4 °C in the dark period) during the collection of leaf tissue in 2004, and still, fine and mild (temperature from 16 °C in the light period to 12 °C in the dark period) when the leaf samples were collected in 2005. Perhaps the temperature variation between the light and dark periods may inhibit or induce the expression of MD-ACO in the bourse shoot leaves of apple. However, in 2004, MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 exhibit different expression patterns from each other, whereas in 2005 they exhibit very similar expression patterns (Figures 3.41 and 3.43 respectively). Thus an explanation may be that one of the MD-ACO genes is more sensitive to exogenous and/or endogenous cues than the other MD-ACO gene.
Almost irrespective of the photoperiod, both \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3} were expressed at six hourly intervals (noon, 6 pm, midnight, 6 am and noon) over a 24 h from 20.11.03 (Figure 3.40), when the young fruit was approximately 2 cm in diameter. These oscillations suggest an endogenous (developmental cues perhaps) rhythmic regulation of both \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3}, rather than a pattern of expression entrained by red light. For example, perhaps CO$_2$ levels may affect gene expression in plants.

For sorghum lacking expression of a functional phytochrome B protein (Finlayson \textit{et al.}, 1999), the mutant (\textit{phyB-1}) expressed \textit{Sb-ACO2} more abundantly and constitutively when compared with the wild type, but nevertheless exhibited weak diurnal and circadian rhythmic patterns under all conditions, with a particularly weak circadian rhythm observed under the simulated high-shade condition. Such reduced \textit{Sb-ACO2} photoperiod sensitivity in the absence of phytochrome B, demonstrates the importance of red light in regulating the gene expression of \textit{ACO}. For example, a 15 min red light pulse (660 nm; but not a blue light pulse) was observed to reset the circadian rhythm of \textit{Stellaria longipes} ACO (SI-ACO1) under the condition of continuous darkness (Kathiresan \textit{et al.}, 1996), suggesting that a red-light signal transduction pathway may be involved in the rhythmic regulation of ACO expression.

This study shows that \textit{MD-ACO2} elicited strong diurnal rhythms in bourse shoot leaves in April (2004 and 2005), while \textit{MD-ACO3} was expressed over all sampling times in April 2004, but exhibited a diurnal rhythm in April 2005 when the fruit remained unharvested. Both \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3} oscillate in approximately 6 h cycles early in the season (November, 2003).

\textit{MD-ACO3} protein accumulated abundantly and constitutively over the 24 h period from 20.11.03, and clearly lacks a diurnal oscillation pattern (Figure 3.40). This result suggests that \textit{MD-ACO3} may undergo post translational modification to prevent degradation, as the gene is only expressed at approximately six hourly intervals and \textit{ACO} from apple has a half life ($t_{1/2}$) of approximately 2 h at 23 $^\circ$C (Pirrung \textit{et al.}, 1993) while the recombinant \textit{MD-ACOs} in this study have $t_{1/2}$s of approximately 29 min at 25 $^\circ$C and 13.5 min at 35 $^\circ$C (Figure 3.30). \textit{MD-ACO3} is unlikely to be stabilized by acetylation at the N-terminus as the adjacent amino acid is charged (glutamic acid), but the protein could be phosphorylated, perhaps glycosylated or associated with another protein. Also or alternatively, mRNA (\textit{MD-ACO3}) may be stabilized and thus allow more protein to accumulate. \textit{MD-ACO3} protein also accumulated constitutively, at very low levels, when the fruit was left on the tree after the harvest date (02.03.05) over the 24 h from 06.04.05, when a strong diurnal expression of \textit{MD-ACO3} occurs (except for expression at 3 am; Figure 3.43). In the absence of fruit there is no evidence of \textit{MD-ACO3} accumulation (Figure 3.42), except at 6 am (prior to sunrise of 6.45 am). Protein accumulated at 3 pm and 3
am in an apparent circadian rhythm over a 24 h period from 07.04.04 (harvest date 27.02.04), in contrast the gene is expressed constitutively with lower levels observed at 6 pm and 3 am (Figure 3.41). The observation of MD-ACO3 accumulation over a 24 h period at 3 h intervals in this study is that, from 20.11.03 protein accumulates abundantly and constitutively, whilst over a 24 h period from 07.04.04 and from 06.04.05 protein accumulates at very low levels, often spasmodically.

In a similar study, a diurnal type accumulation pattern was observed in the mature green leaves of *Trifolium repens* ACO (TR-ACO2) over a 24 h period at 3 h intervals, for 9 h and 15 h photoperiods (Du and McManus, 2006). The highest accumulation for the short day was between 6 am and noon, and also between midnight and 3 am, whilst the lowest accumulation was between 3 pm and 9 pm. Similarly, for the long day the highest accumulation was between 9 pm and 3 am and also at 9 am, whilst the lowest accumulation was from noon to 6 pm and also at 6 am. This protein accumulation data shows that TR-ACO2 in the leaves of white clover displays a 24 h rhythm across light and dark periods, which may be due to post translational regulation. Such rhythmicity of ACO protein accumulation (MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3) is not evident in the bourse shoot leaves of apple, which is in contrast to the strong oscillating gene expression patterns shown for *MD-ACO2* and *MD-ACO3*.

### 4.5 Summary

In conclusion, this study has established that in the Royal Gala cultivar there is a small multigene family of ACO which comprises at least two and possibly three members. Although the kinetic properties of each of the isoforms are not particularly divergent, they do display differential gene expression patterns in vivo. MD-ACO2 and MD-ACO3 do display diurnal patterns of gene expression but not protein accumulation, which may be conditional upon endogenous or environmental factors as the patterns were not consistent from season to season. As a leaf senescence associated ACO was not identified in this study, this indicates either that the leaves of apple do not have an ACO gene which is up-regulated at the onset of senescence, or it has yet to be found.
### 4.6 Future directions

- An assay needs to be developed which can measure ACO activity over a short period of time, i.e. less than one minute. Such an assay would be able to accurately and reliably measure the rate of ACO activity, thus enabling valid comparisons between the ACO isoforms. Ideally, a colourmetric assay which is able to measure either an increase or decrease in products as the reaction progresses. Such as the decrease in ACC or the increase of cyanide over a short period of time that is analysed using an instrument such as the varian spectrophotometer (Cary1E/Cary 3E UV-Vis) which follows the reaction over time.

- The 5'-UTR promoter sequence of each of the apple ACO genes needs to be cloned, and then \textit{MD-ACO} promoter-GUS fusion sequences constructed and expressed in apple (although the juvenile phase of apple is usually 6 to 8 years, and so the expression of \textit{MD-ACO} in tomato may be more appropriate). Such an experiment may reveal in which tissue \textit{MD-ACO1}, \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3} are expressed, and may also give some indication of the relative abundance of each of the translated products, at various developmental stages, particularly in the leaf and fruit tissue.

- Use Real-Time PCR to determine differential expression of \textit{MD-ACO1}, \textit{MD-ACO2} and \textit{MD-ACO3}

- Map of the MD-ACO2 nucleotide sequence to assess the distinction between the two isoforms (MD-ACO1 and MD-ACO2).

- Raise a polyclonal antibody against the 16 amino acids on the carboxyl terminal of \textit{MD-ACO2}, to determine the pattern of MD-ACO2 protein accumulation.

- To overcome any artefactual problems due to the expression of enzymes in \textit{E. coli}, a more meaningful investigation may be to express the MD-ACOs from this study in yeast (\textit{pBEJ15}), and/or to purify the MD-ACOs from apple (leaves and fruit), and then repeat the kinetic comparisons.

- Compare gene expression patterns of ACO in spur leaves and extension shoot leaves as well as bourse shoot leaves (particularly prior to and following fruit harvest). Use temperature controlled rooms to study leaf development, particularly senescence and fruit ripening

- Further determination of the reaction rates and kinetic analysis of Malonyl ACC transferase and Glutamyl ACC transferase in conjunction with ACO to establish the significance of the ACC conjugations. Also examine the reaction rates and kinetic analysis of SAM decarboxylase in conjunction with ACS to establish the regulation of these important biochemical pathways for the biosynthesis of polyamines and ethylene in plant biology.
APPENDIX 1A: The Full Phylogenetic Analysis of the ACO Amino Acid Sequences from *Malus domestica* with Other ACO Genes in the Genbank Database.

Neighbour Joining Tree (p-distances) made from 235 homologous positions of ACO. Non-parametric bootstrap values are shown.
APPENDIX 1B: The Full Name for Each Entry of the Eighty Five ACOs in the Phylogenetic Analysis

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Short name</th>
<th>Amino acids</th>
<th>Full name</th>
<th>Accession number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PP-AOX4</td>
<td>314</td>
<td>Pyrus pyrifolia</td>
<td>BAD61004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cs-ACO2</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Cucumis sativus</td>
<td>ACC67233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pGEFE1</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Pelargonium x hortorum</td>
<td>AAC48977</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Actinidia chinensis</td>
<td>P31237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Betula pendula</td>
<td>CA71738</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO2</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Carica papaya</td>
<td>AAF64528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CP-ACO1</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Carica papaya</td>
<td>AAS16933</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Carica papaya</td>
<td>CAE53415</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO2</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Carica papaya</td>
<td>CAH64841</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CM-ACO3</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>Cucumis melo</td>
<td>CA64799</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO1</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Fagus sylvatica</td>
<td>CAD21844</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G-ACO3</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>Pelargonium x hortorum</td>
<td>AAB70884</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO1</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Gossypium hirsutum</td>
<td>AAZ83342</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>307</td>
<td>Helianthus annuus</td>
<td>AAB71421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Hevea brasiliensis</td>
<td>AAP41850</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LE-ACO1</td>
<td>315</td>
<td>Lycopersicon esculentum</td>
<td>CA41212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LE-ACO2</td>
<td>316</td>
<td>Lycopersicon esculentum</td>
<td>CA68538</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO3</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>Petunia x hybrida</td>
<td>Q08507</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO1</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Plantago major</td>
<td>CAH58646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO2</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Prunus persica</td>
<td>AAF36484</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PC-ACO1</td>
<td>313</td>
<td>Pyrus communis</td>
<td>CA60576</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO1</td>
<td>314</td>
<td>Pyrus communis</td>
<td>CAH18930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JP-AOX1</td>
<td>314</td>
<td>Pyrus pyrifolia</td>
<td>BAA76387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO1</td>
<td>315</td>
<td>Solanum tuberosum</td>
<td>AAK68075</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SH-ACO1</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Striga hermonthica</td>
<td>BAC66950</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TR-ACO1</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Trifolium repens</td>
<td>AAD28196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pVR-ACO1</td>
<td>317</td>
<td>Vigna radiata</td>
<td>ACC48921</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>317</td>
<td>Actinidia deliciosa</td>
<td>BAA21541</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EFE</td>
<td>323</td>
<td>Arabidopsis thaliana</td>
<td>NP171994</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AB-ACO1</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>Vigna angularis</td>
<td>BAA19605</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO2</td>
<td>315</td>
<td>Betula pendula</td>
<td>AAN86821</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EFE</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>Carica papaya</td>
<td>AAL78058</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DK-ACO2</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>Diospyros kaki</td>
<td>BAD89352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DK-ACO1</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Diospyros kaki</td>
<td>Q8S932</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gEFE2</td>
<td>323</td>
<td>Pelargonium x hortorum</td>
<td>AAB70883</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LE-ACO4</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>Lycopersicon esculentum</td>
<td>BAA34924</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LE-ACO3</td>
<td>316</td>
<td>Lycopersicon esculentum</td>
<td>CA90904</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NG-ACO1</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>Nicotiana glutinosa</td>
<td>AAA99792</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Nicotiana tabacum</td>
<td>BAA83466</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EFE</td>
<td>308</td>
<td>Nicotiana tabacum</td>
<td>CA58232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cEFE-26</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Nicotiana tabacum</td>
<td>CA82646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cEFE-27</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Nicotiana tabacum</td>
<td>CA86468</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EFE</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>Petunia x hybrida</td>
<td>AAA33708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO1</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Petunia x hybrida</td>
<td>AAC37381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Short name</td>
<td>Amino acids</td>
<td>Full name</td>
<td>Accession number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>---------------------------------</td>
<td>------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO4</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Petunia x hybrida</td>
<td>Q08508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>317</td>
<td>Pismat sativum</td>
<td>P31239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PE-ACO1</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Populus x canadensis</td>
<td>BAA94601</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO1</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Prunus mume</td>
<td>Q9MB94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Prunus persica</td>
<td>1909340A</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PP-ACO2</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>Prunus persica (partial)</td>
<td>BAA96787</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PAO1-ACO</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Prunus persica</td>
<td>CAA54449</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JP-AOX3</td>
<td>322</td>
<td>Pyrus pyrifolia</td>
<td>BAD61000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pVR-ACO2</td>
<td>308</td>
<td>Vigna radiate</td>
<td>ACC48922</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO2</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Solanum tuberosum</td>
<td>AAK68076</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO3</td>
<td>321</td>
<td>Brassica oleracea</td>
<td>AAO13735</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>Carica papaya</td>
<td>AAB02051</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CP-ACO2</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>Carica papaya</td>
<td>AAS16934</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO2</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>Carica papaya</td>
<td>AAT99445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Citrus sinensis</td>
<td>AAG49361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EFE</td>
<td>318</td>
<td>Cucumis melo</td>
<td>CAA49553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO3</td>
<td>317</td>
<td>Cucumis sativus</td>
<td>AAC67234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cs-ACO1</td>
<td>317</td>
<td>Cucumis sativus</td>
<td>BAA33377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO2</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>Gossypium hirsutum</td>
<td>AAZ83343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO3</td>
<td>317</td>
<td>Gossypium hirsutum</td>
<td>AAZ83344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO4</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>Gossypium hirsutum</td>
<td>ABA01476</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO1</td>
<td>322</td>
<td>Mangifera indica</td>
<td>CAB97173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>323</td>
<td>Medicago truncatula</td>
<td>AAL35971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NG-ACO2</td>
<td>313</td>
<td>Nicotiana glutinosa</td>
<td>AAA99793</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NG-ACO3</td>
<td>316</td>
<td>Nicotiana glutinosa</td>
<td>AAB05171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>299</td>
<td>Nicotiana tabacum</td>
<td>CAA67119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>Persea Americana</td>
<td>P19464</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>315</td>
<td>Phaseolus lunatus</td>
<td>BAB83762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO1</td>
<td>315</td>
<td>Phaseolus vulgaris</td>
<td>AAC12934</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PP-ACO1</td>
<td>268</td>
<td>Prunus persica (partial)</td>
<td>BAA96786</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PP-AOX2A</td>
<td>322</td>
<td>Pyrus pyrifolia</td>
<td>BAD60998</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PP-AOX2B</td>
<td>322</td>
<td>Pyrus pyrifolia</td>
<td>BAD60999</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>314</td>
<td>Rumex palustris</td>
<td>CAA71140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO2</td>
<td>314</td>
<td>Rumex palustris</td>
<td>AAB97368</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>Fragaria x ananassa</td>
<td>AUA01090</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TR-ACO2</td>
<td>314</td>
<td>Trifolium repens</td>
<td>AAD28197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TR-ACO3</td>
<td>306</td>
<td>Trifolium repens</td>
<td>ABB97398</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TR-ACO4</td>
<td>306</td>
<td>Trifolium repens</td>
<td>AF115262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO</td>
<td>316</td>
<td>Tulipa gesneriana</td>
<td>BAE20195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACO1</td>
<td>293</td>
<td>Vitis vinifera (partial)</td>
<td>AAS37687</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Searched 27.01.06)


Bibliography


Burg SP and Stolwijk JAJ. (1959) A highly sensitive katharometer and its application to the measurement of ethylene and other gases of biological importance. *Journal of Biochemical and Microbiological Technology and Engineering, 1*: 245-259.


Sell S and Hehl R. (2005) A fifth member of the tomato l-aminocyclopropane-1-carboxylic acid (ACC) oxidase gene family harbours a leucine zipper and is anaerobically induced. *DNA Sequence, 16:* 80-82.


Sisler EC and Serek M. (1997) Inhibitors of ethylene responses in plants at the receptor level: Recent developments. *Physiologia Plantarum, 100:* 577-582.

Bibliography


